# The Biogeochemical Impacts of Forests and the Implications for Climate Change Mitigation

by

### **Catherine Elizabeth Scott**

Submitted in accordance with the requirements for the degree of Doctor of

Philosophy

University of Leeds School of Earth and Environment

September 2013

### **Declaration of Authorship**

The candidate confirms that the work submitted is her own, except where work which has formed part of jointly-authored publications has been included. The contribution of the candidate and the other authors to this work has been explicitly indicated below. The candidate confirms that appropriate credit has been given within the thesis where reference has been made to the work of others.

The work contained in *Chapter 3* and *Chapter 4* forms the basis of a jointly-authored manuscript which has been accepted for publication in *Atmospheric Chemistry and Physics* and is available online as a discussion paper (details below). A. Rap performed the direct radiative effect calculations, but all GLOMAP-mode simulations and indirect radiative effect calculations were performed by the candidate. The candidate wrote the manuscript with guidance from the co-authors.

C. E. Scott, A. Rap, D. V. Spracklen, P. M. Forster, K. S. Carslaw, G. W. Mann, K. J. Pringle, N. Kivekäs, M. Kulmala, H. Lihavainen and P. Tunved (2013) "The Direct and Indirect Radiative Effects of Biogenic Secondary Organic Aerosol", *Atmospheric Chemistry and Physics Discussions*, **13**, 16961-17019.

The results in *Chapter 3* pertaining to experiments conducted in the CLOUD chamber at CERN form part of a jointly-authored manuscript, currently under review for *Science* (details below). The CLOUD team performed the experiments and the candidate implemented their experimentally derived new particle formation rate in the GLOMAP-mode model, with guidance from K. S. Carslaw.

F. Riccobono, S. Schobesberger, C. E. Scott *et al.*, (2013) "Oxidation Products of Biogenic Emissions Contribute to Nucleation of Atmospheric Particles", *submitted*.

The work described in *Chapter 5* forms the basis of a jointly-authored manuscript which is to be submitted to *Atmospheric Chemistry and Physics*. J. R. Pierce conducted the simulations using the TOMAS model and A. Rap calculated the direct radiative effect; all GLOMAP simulations, and all subsequent analysis was performed by the candidate. The candidate wrote the manuscript and all co-authors provided comments.

C. E. Scott, D. V. Spracklen, J. R. Pierce, I. Riipinen, S. D. D'Andrea, A. Rap, K. S. Carslaw, P. M. Forster, M. Kulmala, G. W. Mann, K. Pringle (2013) "Impact of volatility treatment on the indirect radiative effect of biogenic secondary organic aerosol", *in prep*.

This copy has been supplied on the understanding that it is copyright material and that no quotation from the thesis may be published without proper acknowledgement.

The right of Catherine E. Scott to be identified as Author of this work has been asserted by her in accordance with the Copyright, Designs and Patents Act 1988.

© 2013 The University of Leeds and Catherine E. Scott

### Acknowledgements

Firstly I would like to thank my supervisors: Piers Forster, Dom Spracklen and Ken Carslaw. Without their guidance, advice and support over the past four years, this work, and the production of this thesis would not have been possible. I am extremely grateful for the opportunities they have given me, and the enthusiasm with which they have provided supervision.

Secondly, I would like to thank Alexandru Rap for calculating the direct radiative forcings presented in *Chapter 4*, Jeff Pierce for conducting the TOMAS simulations discussed in *Chapter 5* and Steve Arnold for running the Community Land Model used in *Chapter 6*. I'd also like to thank Francesco Riccobono and the "CLOUD" team for providing the mechanism for new particle formation described in *Chapter 3*. For providing the measurement data used in *Chapter 3*, I would like to thank: Markku Kulmala, Pasi Aalto, Peter Tunved, Niku Kivekas and Heikki Lihavainen. I'd also like to thank Ilona Riipinen and Steve D'Andrea with whom I have collaborated. Also thanks to Richard Rigby, without whose tireless IT support, this work would definitely not have been possible!

During the course of my PhD I have very much valued being part of three great research groups: The Physical Climate Change group, the Aerosol Modelling group and the Biosphere-Atmosphere Group, and would like to thank all members for making me feel very welcome. Deserving of a particular mention for their help and advice over the years are: Anja, Carly, Annabel, Eimear, Alex, Matt, Helen, Tom, Kirsty, Graham, Lindsay, Jo, Steve P, Lawrence, Jayne, Julia, Neil, Susi, Sarah L, Ros, Mike and Sarah M.

For supporting me over the past four years, I'd like to thank my Mum, Dad & Sally, Chris, Adèle & Wayne (& Myla!), Erin, Zarashpe, Ed, Tim, Rosey, Susie, Louisa & Al, Vicky, Amy, my fellow 2009-2013 PhD gang: Amber, Jenn, Dave, Bradley and James, and last but definitely not least, thank you to Ross for everything!

### Abstract

Vegetation emits biogenic volatile organic compounds (BVOCs) into the atmosphere which, once oxidised, may partition into the particle-phase, forming secondary organic aerosol (SOA). In this thesis, the climatic impacts of biogenic SOA are quantified, using a detailed global aerosol microphysics model, and the sensitivity of these radiative effects to the representation of various atmospheric processes is examined.

By altering the size, composition and number of particles in the atmosphere, the presence of biogenic SOA very likely has a negative radiative effect on the climate (i.e. a cooling), via both the *direct* radiative effect (DRE) and first aerosol *indirect* effect (AIE). The DRE from biogenic SOA is sensitive to the large uncertainty in the amount of biogenic SOA being produced in the atmosphere (estimated to be between 12 and 1870 Tg(SOA)  $a^{-1}$ ). The presence of biogenic SOA increases the global annual mean concentration of particles with the potential to form cloud droplets (i.e. cloud condensation nuclei; CCN). Consequently, biogenic SOA exerts a global annual mean first AIE of between +0.03 W m<sup>-2</sup> and -0.77 W m<sup>-2</sup>. Most of the range in the first AIE due to biogenic SOA can be attributed to uncertainty regarding the role of biogenic oxidation products in the very early stages of atmospheric new particle formation (i.e. nucleation). The most negative first AIEs (up to -0.77 W m<sup>-2</sup>) are simulated when BVOC oxidation products do participate in the very early stages of new particle formation; an approach which best captures the observed seasonal cycle in particle concentrations across the continental northern hemisphere. At the outside of the uncertainty range examined here, the DRE and first AIE due to biogenic SOA are almost half the strength (in terms of absolute magnitude) of the estimated net anthropogenic radiative forcing from 1750 to 2005 of  $+1.6 \text{ W m}^{-2}$ .

The sign of the first AIE due to biogenic SOA is also sensitive to assumptions regarding the volatility of biogenic oxidation products and the manner in which their addition to the existing aerosol distribution is modelled. Taking a *kinetic* approach, in which SOA is partitioned according to particle surface area, gives a negative first AIE due to the role of secondary organics in the growth of newly formed particles. However, taking a *thermodynamic* equilibrium approach, in which SOA is added in proportion to existing organic mass, gives a positive first AIE because the growth of newly formed particles is suppressed in the presence of larger particles (i.e. due to the enhanced condensation sink). As a result, the *thermodynamic* approach is not able to capture the observed growth of new particles in the atmosphere and may not be suitable when examining processes that depend strongly on changes to ultrafine particle number, such as the first AIE.

The negative radiative effects of biogenic SOA have implications for the climatic impact of forests and any changes to their distribution. The contribution of the first AIE, due to changes in the production of biogenic SOA, is quantified here using simplified deforestation scenarios. Globally, the replacement of forests with grass results in a first AIE of +0.26 W m<sup>-2</sup> due to a 91% reduction in biogenic SOA production. This increases the total warming effect of deforestation, from the combined changes to carbon dioxide concentration and surface albedo, by 21%.

Regionally, the strongest first AIE (+0.12 W m<sup>-2</sup>) comes from tropical (20°N – 20°S) deforestation which reduces global SOA production by 73%. The largest AIE per change in SOA comes from simulated temperate (20°N – 50°N and 20°S – 50°S) deforestation, which reduces global SOA production by only 15%, but leads to strong warming over remote ocean regions with high cloud fraction. This work suggests that present-day tropical deforestation is warming the climate more than previously thought, confirming that a reduction in deforestation should be a priority for climate change mitigation. These results also suggest that present-day afforestation in temperate regions may be exerting more of a cooling than would be attributed to  $CO_2$  sequestration alone, warranting further investigation.

# Contents

List of Tables	7
List of Figures	9
Abbreviations	. 13
Chapter 1: Introduction	. 15
1.1 The Climate System	. 15
1.2 Forests and their Impact on the Climate	. 17
1.2.1 Historical Changes to Forest Distribution	. 17
1.2.2 Role of Forests in the Carbon Cycle	. 19
1.2.3 Biogeophysical Impacts of Forests	. 20
1.2.4 An Additional Biogeochemical Impact of Forests?	. 24
1.2.4.1 The Emission of Biogenic Volatile Organic Compound (BVOCs)	. 25
1.2.4.2 BVOCs in the Atmosphere	. 29
1.2.4.3 Biogenic Secondary Organic Aerosol (SOA)	. 32
1.2.4.4 Organically-Mediated New Particle Formation	. 35
1.2.4.5 Global SOA Budget	. 35
1.2.4.6 Climatic Impact of Biogenic SOA	. 36
1.2.4.6.1 The Direct Radiative Effect of SOA	. 36
1.2.4.6.2 The First Aerosol Indirect Radiative Effect of SOA	. 37
1.3 Anthropogenic Climate Change	. 40
1.3.1 Drivers of Climate Change	. 40
1.3.1.1 Greenhouse Gases	. 40
1.3.1.2 Aerosol Species	. 41
1.3.1.3 Land-use Change	. 42
1.3.2   Climate Change Mitigation	. 43
1.3.2.1 The Role of Forest Management in Climate Change Mitigation	. 44
1.4 Aims of Thesis	. 47
Chapter 2: Model Description	. 49
2.1 Introduction to GLOMAP	. 49
2.1.1 Representation of the Aerosol Size Distribution	. 50

2.1.2	Gas-Phase Emissions and Processes
2.1.2.1	Sulphur Emissions and Gas-Phase Chemistry53
2.1.2.2	BVOC Emissions and Gas-Phase Chemistry54
2.1.3	Primary Particulate Emissions57
2.1.4	Microphysical Processes
2.1.4.1	New Particle Formation
2.1.4.2	Coagulation60
2.1.4.3	Condensation and Ageing60
2.1.4.4	Hygroscopic Growth
2.1.4.5	Aerosol Activation and Cloud Processing
2.1.4.6	Dry Deposition
2.1.4.7	Wet Deposition: Nucleation and Impaction Scavenging63
2.1.5	Meteorological Conditions
2.2 Calc	ulation of Cloud Condensation Nuclei Concentrations
2.3 Suita	bility of GLOMAP-mode for this work66
2.4 Com	parison to Observations67

### Chapter 3: The Impact of Biogenic SOA on Particle and Cloud Condensation Nuclei Concentration

Concen	tratio	n	69
3.1	Intr	oduction	69
3.2	Exp	erimental Design	70
3.2	2.1	Yield	70
3.2	2.2	New Particle Formation	72
3	3.2.2.1	The CLOUD Mechanism for New Particle Formation	73
3.2	2.3	Characteristics of Primary Carbonaceous Emissions	75
3.2	2.4	Presence of Anthropogenic Emissions	76
3.3	Res	ults	77
3.3	5.1	Changes to Total Particle Concentration	77
3.3	5.2	Changes to Cloud Condensation Nuclei Concentrations	78
3.3	3.3	Sensitivity to New Particle Formation	
3.4	Con	nparison to Observations	
3.4	.1	Seasonal Cycle at Forested Sites	
3.4	.2	Seasonal Cycle in Total Particle Concentration	
3.4	.3	Cloud Condensation Nuclei Concentrations	91
3.5	Sun	nmary and Conclusions	93

Chapte	r 4: The Radiative Impact of Biogenic SOA	
4.1	Introduction	95
4.2	Experimental Setup	96
4.2	.1 The Edwards-Slingo Radiative Transfer Model	
4.2	.2 Direct Radiative Effect	
4.2	.3 Aerosol Indirect Effect	
۷	4.2.3.1 Determining Cloud Droplet Number Concentrations	
۷	4.2.3.2 Determining the AIE	
4.3	Results	
4.3	.1 Direct Radiative Effect	100
4.3	.2 First Aerosol Indirect Radiative Effect	103
۷	4.3.2.1 Cloud Droplet Number Concentration	103
Z	4.3.2.2 Aerosol Indirect Effect	104
4.4	Sensitivity to Anthropogenic Emissions	
4.5	Summary and Conclusions	114
Chapte	r 5: The Impact of Volatility Treatment	117
5.1	Introduction	117
5.1	.1 The Volatility Treatment of SOA	118
5.2	Experimental Setup	
5.3	Results	
5.3	.1 Changes to Cloud Droplet Number Concentration	125
5.3	.2 First Aerosol Indirect Effect	128
5.4	Summary and Conclusions	
Chapte	r 6: The Radiative Effects of Deforestation	
6.1	Introduction	
6.2	Experimental Setup	136
6.2	.1 The Community Land Model and MEGAN	136
e	5.2.1.1 MEGANv2.1	138
e	5.2.1.2 Comparison to Previous BVOC Emission Inventory	140
6.2	.2 Changes to GLOMAP-mode Model Setup	
6.2	.3 Deforestation Experiments	144

6.2.	3.1 Radiative Effects of Deforestation	145
6.3 R	esults	148
6.3.1	First Aerosol Indirect Effect	149
6.3.2	Other Radiative Effects of Forests	
6.4 S	ummary and Conclusions	155
Chapter 7:	Conclusions, Implications and Further Work	157
7.1 S	ummary of Results	157
7.1.1	Implications for Understanding and Mitigating Future Climate Cha	ange 161
7.2 F	urther Work	164

7.2.1	Secondary Organic Aerosol in GLOMAP	. 165
7.2.2	Dry Deposition in GLOMAP	. 165
7.2.3	Tropospheric Chemistry	166

References	 

# **List of Tables**

Table 1.1: Summary of the main BVOCs emitted by vegetation and their associated atmospheric
lifetime with respect to oxidation
Table 1.2: Summary of ambient BVOC concentration measurements
Table 2.1: Summary of GLOMAP-mode configuration.    51
Table 2.2: Characteristics of GLOMAP-mode components included in this configuration
Table 2.3: Sulphur based reactions included in GLOMAP-mode.    53
Table 2.4: BVOC reaction rates used in GLOMAP.    56
Table 3.1: Summary of simulations performed71
Table 3.2: Summary of new particle formation mechanisms used
Table 3.3: Global annual mean surface-level changes to $N_3$ and CCN concentration, relative to an
equivalent control simulation including no BVOC emission78
Table 3.4: Pearson correlation coefficient $(R)$ between multi-annual monthly mean observed and
simulated monthly mean N <sub>80</sub> concentrations
Table 3.5: Observation sites used in comparison.    89
Table 3.6: Mean Pearson correlation coefficient between multi-annual observed and simulated monthly
mean total particle concentration, across 19 continental boundary layer locations91
Table 3.7: Locations included in the subset of CCN observations    92
Table 4.1: Global annual mean changes to CDNC at cloud height (approximately 900 hPa), all-sky
DRE and first AIE, relative to an equivalent control simulation including no BVOC emission101
Table 4.2: Summary of previous estimates of the radiative effects of SOA.       102
Table 4.3: Global annual mean changes to surface-level CCN, CDNC at cloud height (approximately
900 hPa), and first AIE in a pre-industrial atmosphere, relative to an equivalent control simulation
including no BVOC emission
Table 5.1: Global annual mean fluxes of secondary organic material, in the model surface layer, to the
aerosol size distribution in GLOMAP124
Table 5.2: Global annual mean change to CDNC and first AIE, resulting from the inclusion of biogenic
SOA in GLOMAP and TOMAS simulations using the kinetic and thermodynamic approaches128
Table 6.1: Plant functional types, land area covered by each in the control experiment, and their
emissions factors for isoprene and the dominant monoterpene (α-pinene)
Table 6.2: Surface type characteristics used in GLOMAP-mode for forest and grass
Table 6.3: Atmospheric CO2 concentrations after simulated deforestation
Table 6.4: BVOC emissions and amount of SOA generated during deforestation expts
Table 6.5: Summary of results from deforestation scenarios.    149
Table 6.6: Summary of global annual mean radiative effects due to change in BVOC emission, surface
albedo and atmospheric CO2 concentration associated with each deforestation scenario

# **List of Figures**

Figure 1.1: Schematic of the estimated global average energy budget
Figure 1.2: Estimated percentage forest cover in 200017
Figure 1.3: Estimated area of deforestation, in tropical and temperate regions
Figure 1.4: Annual change of forest area by region
Figure 1.5: Summary of biogeophysical impacts of forests20
Figure 1.6: Estimated global net radiative forcing due to carbon sequestration and surface albedo22
Figure 1.7: Summary of the additional biogeochemical impact of forests explored in this thesis24
Figure 1.8: Chemical structures of isoprene and seven monoterpenes25
Figure 1.9: Average observed aerosol mass versus total emission of monoterpenes
Figure 1.10: Components of anthropogenic radiative forcing in 2005, relative to 1750, for principal
emissions41
Figure 2.1: Summary of main processes included in the GLOMAP model50
Figure 2.2: Schematic of the aerosol number size distribution, as represented by GLOMAP-mode51
Figure 2.3: Monthly mean monoterpene and isoprene emission rates from the GEIA inventory55
Figure 2.4: Seasonal cycle in monthly mean monoterpene concentration as simulated by GLOMAP-
mode and observed at Hyytiälä, Finland56
Figure 3.1: Simplified schematic of the possible pathways by which initiating clusters may form and
grow74
Figure 3.2: Simulated annual mean absolute and percentage changes to surface level CCN number
concentration resulting from the emission of monoterpenes, isoprene and both monoterpenes and
isoprene
Figure 3.3: Monthly mean absolute change in surface CCN number concentration, across three latitude
bands, when monoterpene, isoprene and both monoterpene and isoprene emissions are included.
Seasonal mean absolute change in CCN number concentration during Dec-Feb and Jun-Aug using the
ACT mechanism
Figure 3.4: Annual mean absolute and percentage change in surface CCN number concentration when
monoterpene emissions are included in the model, using four particle formation mechanisms
Figure 3.5: Simulated annual mean absolute and percentage changes to surface level CCN number
concentration when monoterpene emissions are included in the model, for the Org1_m, Org2_m and
<i>Org3_m</i> experiments
Figure 3.6: Multi-annual monthly mean observed seasonal cycle in $N_{\rm 80}$ concentration at Hyytiälä and
Pallas; $N_{80}$ concentrations simulated using the ACT, Org1, Org2 and Org3 nucleation mechanisms87
Figure 3.7: Simulated and measured seasonal (June-July-August) mean number size distribution at
Hyytiälä, Finland. Simulations include both monoterpene and isoprene emissions, with SOA yields
varied by a factor of 10

Figure 3.8: Simulated and measured seasonal (June-July-August) mean number size distribution at Hyytiälä, Finland. Simulations include different representations of new particle formation......88 Figure 3.9: Normalised concentration anomaly in simulated and observed monthly mean total particle concentration across 19 northern hemisphere continental boundary layer locations. Multi-annual observations are derived from measurements with various minimum cut-off diameters......90 Figure 4.1: Annual mean all-sky DRE due to biogenic SOA relative to an equivalent simulation with no biogenic SOA. Variation in the global annual mean DRE of biogenic SOA associated with several Figure 4.2: Annual mean absolute and percentage change to CDNC due to biogenic SOA for the Figure 4.3: Annual mean absolute and percentage change to CDNC due to biogenic SOA for the Figure 4.4: Annual mean first AIE associated with the perturbation in cloud droplet number concentration due to biogenic SOA, relative to an equivalent simulation with no biogenic SOA. Variation in the global annual mean AIE (right) of biogenic SOA associated with several parameters Figure 4.5: Annual mean first AIE associated with the perturbation in cloud droplet number concentration due to biogenic SOA in the *Org3\_m* simulation......106 Figure 4.6: Annual zonal mean AIE from biogenic SOA when the yield of SOA production is varied Figure 4.7: Summertime (June-July-August) mean first AIE from biogenic SOA in the Org3\_m Figure 4.8: Simulated annual mean absolute and percentage changes to surface level CCN number concentration due to the inclusion of monoterpene and isoprene emissions in the ACT\_1750\_mi Figure 4.9: Annual mean DRE and first AIE from biogenic SOA when anthropogenic emissions from 1750 are included in GLOMAP. .....111 Figure 4.10: Annual zonal mean AIE from biogenic SOA in the present day and pre-industrial when the ACT and Org1 nucleation mechanisms are used......112 Figure 4.11: Percentage change to global annual mean CCN concentration, when biogenic SOA is included, simulated using the ACT nucleation mechanism at four different SOA production yields, Figure 4.12: Anthropogenic first aerosol indirect RF from 1750 to present day, simulated using the ACT nucleation mechanism at four different yields for SOA production, and using the Org1 nucleation Figure 5.1: Simulated and measured (multi-annual; 1996-2006) mean size distribution at Hyytiälä 

Figure 5.2: Annual mean percentage change to CDNC from biogenic SOA in GLOMAP and TOMAS,
in the model level which corresponds to low level cloud base. Secondary organic mass is distributed
according to the kinetic approach in panels $a$ and $c$ , and according to the thermodynamic approach in
panels b and d126
Figure 5.3: Annual mean first AIE from biogenic SOA in GLOMAP and TOMAS when secondary
organic mass distributed kinetically and thermodynamically
Figure 5.4: Annual zonal mean first AIE due to biogenic SOA based on CDNC changes calculated at
five different globally uniform updraught velocities
Figure 5.5: Annual zonal mean percentage CDNC change, over tropical latitudes ( $20^{\circ}N - 20^{\circ}S$ ), due to
biogenic SOA in GLOMAP and TOMAS, at five different globally uniform updraught velocities132
Figure 5.6: Seasonal cycle in global mean first AIE simulated using GLOMAP and TOMAS;
partitioning organics according to the kinetic model and thermodynamic model133
Figure 6.1: Summary of the impacts of deforestation that are examined in this chapter
Figure 6.2: Dominant PFT in each grid cell for the standard land-cover configuration of the CLM137
Figure 6.3: Fraction of global total monoterpene emission contributed by individual compounds140
Figure 6.4: Emission ratio (GEIA $\div$ CLM) for total monoterpenes and isoprene during January and
July141
Figure 6.5: Monthly mean monoterpene concentrations simulated by GLOMAP-mode using the GEIA
emission inventory and emissions generated by the CLM142
Figure 6.6: Multi-annual monthly mean observed and simulated seasonal cycle in $N_{80}$ concentration at
Hyytiälä143
Figure 6.7: Regions over which forest is replaced in each deforestation experiment
Figure 6.8: Annual mean first AIE resulting from reduction in SOA due to replacement of global,
boreal, temperate and tropical forests with grass
Figure 6.9: Monthly-mean first AIE, over the boreal, NH temperate, SH temperate and tropical
regions, during the global deforestation simulation
Figure 6.10: NH summertime mean first AIE due to global deforestation152
Figure 6.11: Annual mean radiative effect of change in surface albedo and atmospheric $\mathrm{CO}_2$
concentration due to simulated global deforestation
Figure 6.12: Seasonal cycle in regional mean RE due to surface albedo change only154

# Abbreviations

AIE	Aerosol Indirect Effect
AOGCM	Atmosphere-Ocean General Circulation Model
BHN	Binary Homogeneous Nucleation
BLN	Boundary Layer Nucleation
BVOC	Biogenic Volatile Organic Compound
CCN	Cloud Condensation Nuclei
CDNC	Cloud Droplet Number Concentration
CO <sub>2</sub> e	Carbon Dioxide Equivalent
DRE	Direct Radiative Effect
ECS	Equilibrium Climate Sensitivity
ESM	Earth System Model
FAO	Food and Agriculture Organisation of the United Nations
GCM	General Circulation Model
GHG	Greenhouse Gas
GFED	Global Fire Emissions Database
IPCC	Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change
LW	Longwave
ppbv	Parts per billion by volume
pptv	Parts per trillion by volume
RCP	Representative Concentration Pathway
RE	Radiative Effect
RF	Radiative Forcing
SOA	Secondary Organic Aerosol
SMPS	Scanning Mobility Particle Sizer
SRES	Special Report on Emission Scenarios
SS	Supersaturation
SS <sub>max</sub>	Maximum Supersaturation
SW	Shortwave
TOA	Top of the Atmosphere
UNFCCC	United Nations Framework Convention on Climate Change

### **Chapter 1: Introduction**

### **1.1 The Climate System**

The energy balance of the Earth system is governed by fluxes of incoming and outgoing radiation. Shortwave (SW) solar radiation reaching the Earth system is either reflected or absorbed, as dictated by the nature of the surface and composition of the atmosphere. Figure 1.1 depicts the estimated global average energy flows within the Earth system and indicates that the atmosphere exerts considerable control over how much incoming radiation reaches the surface.

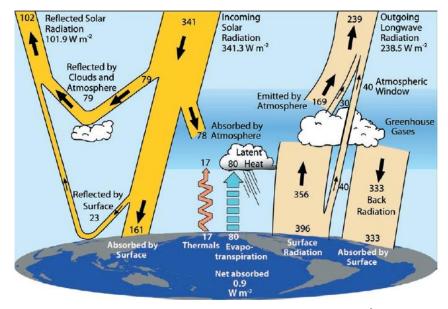


Figure 1.1: Schematic of the estimated global average energy budget (values in W m<sup>-2</sup>) for March 2000 to May 2004; reproduced from Trenberth *et al.* 2009.

Almost half of the incoming solar radiation is absorbed at the Earth's surface and reemitted at longer wavelengths (LW); the Earth system behaves almost as a black body with a total emissive power ( $\sigma T^4$ ) proportional to the fourth power of its temperature, *T*, where  $\sigma$  is the Stefan-Boltzmann constant. In its equilibrium state, the amount of energy entering the Earth system is equal to that which leaves. If LW radiation is prevented from leaving, the system shifts in order to maintain the required outgoing flux, with an increase in emissive temperature. As such, changes to atmospheric composition, levels of incoming SW radiation, and properties of the Earth's surface that initiate a radiative imbalance, can alter the temperature.

A radiative forcing (RF) may be assigned to physical factors on the basis of their ability to perturb the Earth's radiative balance, over a given time period. The RF is most commonly defined as the net change in radiative flux (i.e. downwards minus upwards) at the tropopause, after allowing for stratospheric temperatures to readjust to radiative equilibrium but with surface and tropospheric temperatures and state held fixed at their unperturbed values (Hansen *et al.* 1997; Ramaswamy *et al.* 2001; Forster *et al.* 2007). As the surface and troposphere are strongly coupled by convective heat transfer, there is a direct relationship between the RF across the tropopause and the global mean equilibrium temperature change at the Earth's surface ( $\Delta T_s$ ), such that  $\Delta T_s = \lambda$  RF (Ramaswamy *et al.* 2001), where  $\lambda$  represents the *climate sensitivity parameter* (in K W<sup>-1</sup> m<sup>2</sup>). However, the relationship between RF and transient climate change is not straightforward, and consideration must be given to the temporal and spatial variability of the forcing agent.

### **1.2** Forests and their Impact on the Climate

Approximately 31 % of the Earth's land area (4.03 billion hectares) is presently covered by forest (Figure 1.2); one third of this being undisturbed primary forest (FAO 2010). More than half of the world's current forest cover lies within just five countries: The Russian Federation, Brazil, Canada, the United States of America and China (FAO 2010).

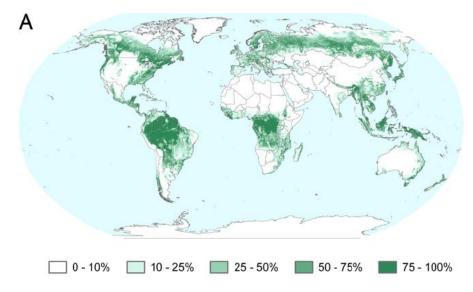


Figure 1.2: Estimated percentage forest cover in 2000; reproduced from Hansen et al. (2010).

#### **1.2.1** Historical Changes to Forest Distribution

Land-use change has accompanied population growth for many years, particularly the last 6000. As indicated in Figure 1.3, prior to 1850 deforestation occurred mostly in temperate regions (Asia, Europe and North America). In medieval Europe, deforestation in France, Germany and the UK occurred mainly on the land considered most suitable for farming; the extensive coniferous forests of Finland, Norway and Sweden escaped relatively unscathed during this time, with deforestation in these countries concentrated around cities and less widespread than in other European countries (Williams 2003).

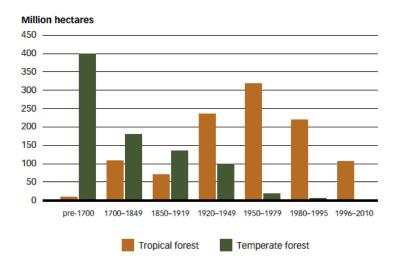


Figure 1.3: Estimated area of deforestation, in tropical and temperate regions, from pre-1700 to 2010; reproduced from FAO (2012).

From around 1900 onwards, the majority of deforestation has occurred in tropical regions (Figure 1.3), specifically South and Central America, South-east Asia and Central Africa; during the 1990s approximately 16 million hectares of forest was lost globally per year. As with temperate deforestation, forest clearance in the tropics occurs predominantly to acquire land suitable for agriculture (Gibbs *et al.* 2010), in particular for food and fuel crop growth in Africa and South-east Asia (e.g. Burgess *et al.* 2002; Gibbs *et al.* 2008; Miettinen *et al.* 2011; Malhi *et al.* 2013), and cattle ranching in South and Central America (e.g. Grainger 1993; Fearnside 2005). Pressure on the land from mineral mining (e.g. to obtain gold, copper, tin), coal mining, and oil drilling is also particularly prevalent in parts of South America, Africa and South-east Asia (Grainger 1993).

Since 2000, the rate of tropical forest loss has slowed (Figure 1.4 and e.g. Miettinen *et al.* 2011; Mayaux *et al.* 2013), with approximately 13 million hectares of forest removed globally each year between 2000 and 2010 (FAO 2010). For the same period, the net rate of forest area change is estimated at -5.2 million hectares per year (FAO 2010). This is lower than the rate of forest loss, due to extensive afforestation, particularly in China (Fang *et al.* 1998; Fang *et al.* 2001; Wang *et al.* 2007), and the natural expansion of forests onto previously managed lands.

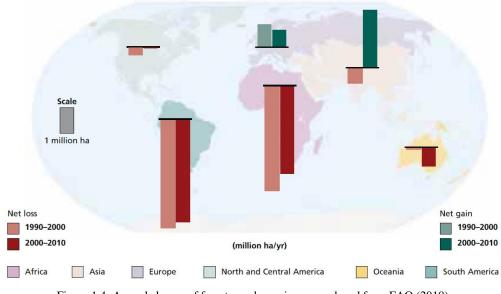


Figure 1.4: Annual change of forest area by region; reproduced from FAO (2010).

As indicated in Figure 1.4, the distribution of the world's forests is changing; whilst most deforestation occurs in the tropics, natural forest expansion and afforestation occurs primarily in temperate and boreal regions.

#### **1.2.2** Role of Forests in the Carbon Cycle

Plants take in carbon, in the form of carbon dioxide ( $CO_2$ ), from the atmosphere. Approximately half of this carbon is returned to the atmosphere during respiration, whilst the other half is fixed as plant biomass during photosynthesis. The metabolic activity of ecosystems controls the atmospheric concentration of  $CO_2$ , with a marked seasonal cycle evident in observations (e.g. NOAA 2013).

The total amount of carbon stored, in terrestrial ecosystems is uncertain: the tropical forests of Latin America, Sub-Saharan Africa and Asia are estimated to contain between 247 and 553 Pg(C) (Prentice *et al.* 2001; Saatchi *et al.* 2011), temperate forests between 159 and 292 Pg(C) (Dixon *et al.* 1994) and boreal forests between 395 and 559 Pg(C) (Dixon *et al.* 1994). Inverse modelling based on atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations, known carbon emissions and an estimated ocean sink, suggests that, globally, the terrestrial

biosphere is currently a carbon sink of approximately ~1-3 Pg(C) a<sup>-1</sup> (Prentice *et al.* 2001; Canadell *et al.* 2007; Denman *et al.* 2007; Canadell and Raupach 2008; Pan *et al.* 2011).

#### **1.2.3 Biogeophysical Impacts of Forests**

As well as controlling the atmospheric concentration of  $CO_2$ , the presence of large-scale vegetation can affect the balance of radiation in the Earth system through several biogeophysical mechanisms. The relative importance of each of these mechanisms, summarised in Figure 1.5, is latitude dependent (Bonan 2008).

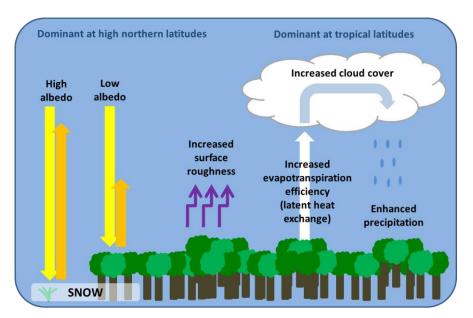


Figure 1.5: Summary of biogeophysical impacts of forests.

Most trees have a lower albedo (typically 0.08 to 0.19 e.g. Betts and Ball 1997; Monteith and Unsworth 2008a) than cultivated surface types such as grass or cropland (typical albedo of 0.15 to 0.26 e.g. Monteith and Unsworth 2008a). A lower albedo means that a smaller proportion of incoming SW solar radiation is reflected by the land-surface, imposing a warming on the Earth system when compared to a higher albedo surface. At tropical latitudes, the warming induced by the lower surface albedo is more than offset by

strong evaporative cooling (i.e. due to more efficient evapotranspiration by trees; Spracklen *et al.* 2012).

At high northern latitudes (above 60°N), snow covers the ground for a substantial fraction of the year. If the snow is lying on short vegetation, it will completely cover it (Figure 1.5) and the surface albedo will be high, e.g 0.57 (Jin *et al.* 2002), or 0.75 (Betts and Ball 1997). However, if boreal trees are present, they will protrude from the snow, and the albedo will be much lower (Leonard and Eschner 1968; Robinson and Kukla 1985; Thomas and Rowntree 1992), e.g. 0.11 for snow covered spruce/poplar and 0.15 for pine (Betts and Ball 1997).

Surface roughness is greater for forests (e.g. characteristic roughness length of 1 m) than for shorter vegetation (e.g. characteristic roughness length of 0.001 m), potentially increasing turbulence in the boundary layer (Monteith and Unsworth 2008b). The overall impact on surface temperature remains unclear, but a higher surface roughness could lead to increased sensible and latent heat fluxes (Lean and Warrilow 1989).

The climatic impacts of forests are difficult to isolate from observations, so models are used to estimate the effect of removing or adding forests in a particular area (e.g. Lean and Warrilow 1989; Bonan *et al.* 1992; Betts 2000; Claussen *et al.* 2001; Bounoua *et al.* 2002; Snyder *et al.* 2004; Gibbard *et al.* 2005; Bala *et al.* 2007; Davin and de Noblet-Ducoudré 2010; Pongratz *et al.* 2010; Arora and Montenegro 2011; Hallgren *et al.* 2013).

Using an integrated carbon-climate model, Bala *et al.* (2007) found that the net climate impact of simulated global forest removal was a temperature reduction of -0.3 K. Removing tropical forest led to a global mean warming (+0.7 K) due to a reduction in evapotranspiration and high carbon storage in the tropics, whereas the removal of boreal forests gave a global mean cooling (-0.8 K) due to the dominance of the surface albedo effect. Using a fully coupled land-atmosphere-ocean general circulation model (GCM),

Davin and de Noblet-Ducoudré (2010) also found that simulated global forest removal generated a cooling (-1 K) with the albedo effect dominant at high latitudes, and the effects of reduced surface roughness and evapotranspiration dominant in the tropics.

In temperate regions, the balance between competing biogeophysical effects is less clear than for either boreal or tropical forests (Claussen *et al.* 2001). Bala *et al.* (2007) simulated a global annual mean cooling of -0.04 K for total temperate deforestation. For the northern hemisphere (NH) alone, Snyder *et al.* (2004) obtained a larger annual mean cooling of -1.1 K and found that the effect was seasonally dependent, with a simulated warming during JJA and SON, but a cooling for DJF and MAM. Using a combined atmospheric, land-surface and carbon-cycle model (CAM 3.0-CLM 3.5-CASA), Swann *et al.* (2012) found a global mean temperature change of between -0.4 K and +0.1 K due to northern mid-latitude afforestation (replacement of all C<sub>3</sub> grass between 30°N and 60°N with broadleaf deciduous trees), but also simulate a northward shift of tropical precipitation belts and drying of the southern Amazon.

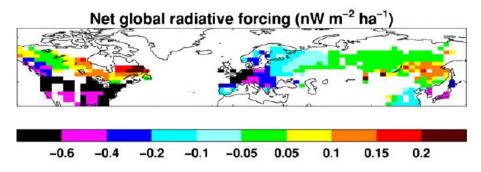


Figure 1.6: Estimated global net radiative forcing due to carbon sequestration and surface albedo (the value in each pixel represents the global mean net radiative effect due to afforestation of 1 ha in that pixel alone); reproduced from Betts *et al.* 2007.

By combining the radiative effect of albedo decrease and potential carbon sequestration, Betts *et al.* (2007) derived a net radiative effect for forest plantations in temperate and boreal regions (Figure 1.6). Plantations in some regions of Canada, Russia and Northern China exert a simulated net positive radiative effect, whilst temperate regions of North America and Europe exert a net negative radiative effect. However, a substantial fraction of the area examined falls into the -0.05 to +0.05 nW m<sup>-2</sup> ha<sup>-1</sup> category (green in Figure 1.6), suggesting that forests planted here could contribute a warming or cooling if there were additional climate impacts not considered by this study.

#### 1.2.4 An Additional Biogeochemical Impact of Forests?

In addition to  $CO_2$ , vegetation exchanges carbon with the atmosphere in the form of gasphase biogenic volatile organic compounds (BVOCs), such as isoprene ( $C_5H_8$ ; 2-methyl 1,3-butadiene), monoterpenes ( $C_{10}H_{16}$ ), and sesquiterpenes ( $C_{15}H_{24}$ ) (Went 1960b; Rasmussen and Went 1965; Sanadze and Kursanov 1966; Guenther *et al.* 1991). Once oxidised (Section 1.2.4.2), these compounds are able to partition into the atmospheric particle phase (Section 1.2.4.3). Figure 1.7 summarises how this process may affect the climate; *directly* by perturbing the path of incoming solar radiation, and *indirectly* by modifying the microphysical properties of clouds.

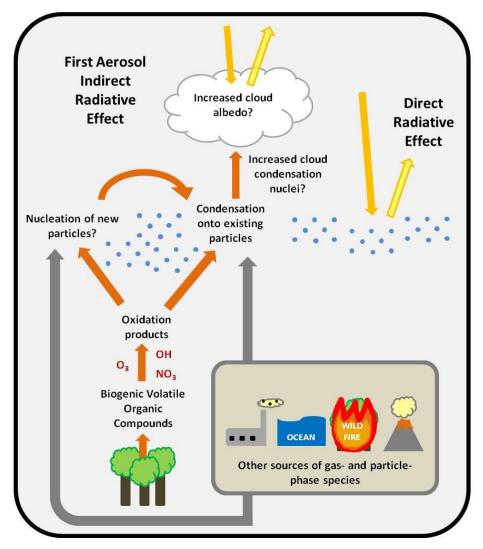


Figure 1.7: Summary of the additional biogeochemical impact of forests explored in this thesis.

#### **1.2.4.1** The Emission of Biogenic Volatile Organic Compound (BVOCs)

The production of BVOCs (Figure 1.8) requires a large energy investment from plants (1-2% of photosynthetic carbon fixation), suggesting that some form of advantage is gained from their emission; potentially by enhancing the resilience of the plant to abiotic stress (e.g. temperature, light and oxidative damage; Loreto and Velikova 2001; Vickers *et al.* 2009), inhibiting the establishment of competing plants (Muller 1966), altering the climate (e.g. temperature, precipitation and cloud cover; e.g. Spracklen *et al.* 2008a; Paasonen *et al.* 2013), allowing below ground signalling (e.g. Rasmann *et al.* 2005), or reducing insect and herbivore attack (e.g. Oh *et al.* 1967; Kessler and Baldwin 2001; Amin *et al.* 2013). Insects, such as the sawfly, are known to sequester monoterpenes from their host plants and eject them in their own defence (Harborne 1988).

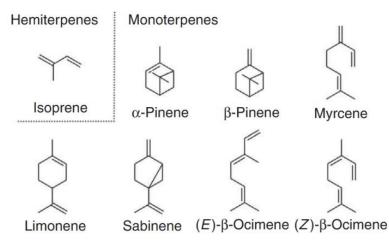


Figure 1.8: Chemical structures of isoprene and seven monoterpenes; reproduced from Vickers et al. 2009.

Isoprene, monoterpenes and sesquiterpenes are synthesised, *de novo*, during the plastidic 2-C-methyl-D-erythritol 4-phosphate (MEP) and the cytosolic mevalonic acid (MVA) biosynthetic pathways within the chloroplast (Lichtenthaler *et al.* 1997; Rohmer 1999; Lange *et al.* 2000). Dimethylallyl pyrophosphate (DMAPP) is converted to isoprene by isoprene synthase (Silver and Fall 1991), whereas monoterpenes and sesquiterpenes are generated by the addition of isopentyl pyrophosphate (IPP) to DMAPP, via geranyl diphosphate (GPP) and farnesyl diphosphate (FPP) respectively (McGarvey and Croteau

1995; Ogura and Koyama 1998). Many other isoprenoid compounds (i.e. those composed of repeating  $C_5$  units) are generated by plants, but their vapour pressure is too low to allow them to volatilise at normal biological temperatures (Dudareva *et al.* 2006).

Once produced, monoterpenes are stored in the leaf and emitted when the vapour pressure of the individual compounds allows volatilisation (Dement *et al.* 1975), from the adaxial side of the leaf which does not have stomatal pores (Guenther *et al.* 1991). Consequently, monoterpene emission levels vary exponentially with temperature, but are not thought to be strongly controlled by light availability (Tingey *et al.* 1980). As monoterpenes are stored in the leaf, their emission can still be detected when their synthesis may be assumed to be low e.g. due to drought (e.g. Lappalainen *et al.* 2009).

Isoprene production is both light and temperature-dependent (Rasmussen and Jones 1973; Tingey *et al.* 1979; Guenther *et al.* 1993). The observed increase in isoprene emission with increasing temperature has been attributed to the kinetics of the enzyme isoprene synthase; however isoprene synthase may become denatured at very high temperatures (> 40°C) above which isoprene emission levels fall (Monson *et al.* 1992; Guenther *et al.* 1993). Isoprene is emitted from the abaxial side of the leaf which features stomatal pores through which the molecules diffuse (Guenther *et al.* 1991), leaving a negligible amount stored in the leaf. Experimental studies have shown that isoprene emission is also sensitive to ambient  $CO_2$  concentration (Sharkey *et al.* 1991), becoming inhibited at higher levels (Rosenstiel *et al.* 2003). The lower isoprene emission level was found to accompany an increase in above ground biomass, and did not reflect a decrease in overall productivity; photosynthesis generally being enhanced under higher [CO<sub>2</sub>].

The emission of BVOCs by vegetation is sensitive to disturbances, hence their hypothesised role in plant defence. Forest management i.e. logging, has been found to temporarily enhance monoterpene emission (Haapanala *et al.* 2012) and beetle infestation

has also been shown to cause an overall increase in monoterpene emission (Berg *et al.* 2013).

In order to quantify global BVOC emissions and represent their behaviour in landsurface, climate and Earth-system models, algorithms have been developed to calculate emissions from a variety of species under different climatic conditions (e.g. Lamb *et al.* 1987; Pierce and Waldruff 1991; Guenther *et al.* 1995; Pierce *et al.* 1998; Guenther *et al.* 2006; Arneth *et al.* 2007; Unger *et al.* 2013); either by linking BVOC emission directly to light intensity and temperature (e.g. Guenther *et al.* 2012), or calculating BVOC emission at the leaf level on the basis of electron availability (e.g. Niinemets *et al.* 1999; Niinemets *et al.* 2002). Combining these emission models with different land-cover information and climate data yields a wide range of global total BVOC emission estimates; 32 - 156Tg(C) a<sup>-1</sup> for monoterpenes and 412 - 601 Tg(C) a<sup>-1</sup> for isoprene (Arneth *et al.* 2008; Guenther *et al.* 2012).

	res	pect to oxidation (where known) by O	H, O <sub>3</sub> and NO		natad lifati	me for
Biogenic Volatile Organic			Global	Estimated lifetime for reaction with:		
		Example of known emitting	emission	(assumed oxidant concentration		
-	oound	genus *	estimate	given in brackets)		
Com	Jound	genus	(Tg a <sup>-1</sup> )	ОН	<b>O</b> <sub>3</sub>	NO <sub>3</sub>
		(Iga)	(2 x 10 <sup>6</sup>	(7 x 10 <sup>11</sup>	(2.5 x 10 <sup>8</sup>	
				mol cm <sup>-3</sup> )	mol cm <sup>-3</sup> )	mol cm <sup>-3</sup> )
Isopren	e (C <sub>5</sub> H <sub>8</sub> )	Eucalyptus (Guenther et al. 1991)	535 <sup>a</sup>	1.4 hr	1.3 day	1.6 hr
-50-P1-01	(038)	Quercus (Tingey et al. 1981)				
		Abies (Rasmussen 1972)				
	α-pinene	Pinus (Tingey et al. 1980)	66 <sup>a</sup>	2.6 hr	4.6 hr	11 min
		Picea (Evans et al. 1985)				
	ß-ninene	Pinus (Tingey et al. 1980)	19 <sup>a</sup>	1.8 hr	1.1 days	27 min
	β-pinene	Picea (Evans et al. 1985)	19	1.0 III	1.1 uays	27 11111
	limonene	Pinus (Tingey et al. 1980)	11 <sup>a</sup>	49 mins	2 hr	5 min
	3-carene	Larix (Steinbrecher et al. 1993)	7 <sup>a</sup>	1.6 hr	11 hr	7 min
	camphene	Picea (Evans et al. 1985)	4 <sup>a</sup>	2.6 hr	18 days	1.7 hr
Monoterpenes	sabinene	Quercus (Street et al. 1997)	9 <sup>a</sup>	1.2 hr	4.8 hr	7 min
$(C_{10}H_{16})$	myrcene	Pinus (Tingey et al. 1980)	9 ª	39 min	50 min	6 min
(010116)	ingreene	Picea (Evans et al. 1985)		57 1111	50 1111	0 11111
	cis-/trans-	Pinus (Staudt et al. 1997)	19 <sup>a</sup>	33 min	44 min	3 min
	ocimene					
	α-phellandrene	Schinus (Corchnoy et al. 1992)	-	27 min	8 min	0.9 min
	β-phellandrene	Pinus (Tingey et al. 1980)	1.5 <sup>a</sup>	50 min	8.4 hr	8 min
		Picea (Evans et al. 1985)				
	α-terpinene	Abies (Helmig et al. 1999)	1 <sup>b</sup>	23 min	1 min	0.5 min
	γ-terpinene	Sequoia (Okamoto et al. 1981)		47 min	2.8 hr	2 min
	terpinolene	Picea (Helmig et al. 1999)	1.3 <sup>a</sup>	37 min	13 min	0.7 min
	β-caryophyllene	Pinus (Geron and Arnts 2010)	7 <sup>a</sup>	42 min	2 min	3 min
Sesquiterpenes	α-farnesene	Pinus (Geron and Arnts 2010)	7 <sup>a</sup>	-	-	-
(C <sub>15</sub> H <sub>24</sub> )	α-copaene	Salvia (Arey et al. 1995)	-	1.5 hr	2.5 hr	4 min
	α-humulene	Pinus (Geron and Arnts 2010)	2 <sup>a</sup>	28 min	2 min	2 min

Table 1.1: Summary of the main BVOCs emitted by vegetation and their associated atmospheric lifetime with
respect to oxidation (where known) by OH, $O_3$ and $NO_3$ .

\*Common names: *Albies* = fir, *Eucalyptus* = eucalyptus / gum, *Larix* = larch, *Quercus* = oak, *Pinus* = pine, *Picea* = spruce,

*Schinus* = pepper tree, *Sequoia* = redwood

<sup>a</sup> Guenther *et al.* 2012 <sup>b</sup> Guenther *et al.* 1995, Griffin *et al.* 1999.

#### **1.2.4.2 BVOCs in the Atmosphere**

Considerable diurnal variability is observed in the atmospheric concentration of BVOCs (e.g. Janson *et al.* 2001; Hakola *et al.* 2012). Ambient daytime monoterpene concentrations up to 500 pptv have been observed at boreal forest locations in the NH summertime, whilst concentrations up to 8000 pptv have been reported at night (Table 1.2). Conversely, in the Amazon rainforest, monoterpene concentrations have been observed to peak during the day at around 800 pptv (Jardine *et al.* 2011). The diurnal cycle in observed BVOC concentrations occurs due to controls on emissions (e.g. sensitivity to light and temperature), the height of the boundary layer and amount of vertical mixing, and the nature of reactions occurring in the atmosphere.

BVOCs are highly reactive and quickly oxidised by the hydroxyl radical (OH), ozone (O<sub>3</sub>) and the nitrate radical (NO<sub>3</sub>), to form more highly functionalised, but lower volatility, compounds (see Table 1.1 for atmospheric lifetimes with respect to oxidation). Atmospheric concentrations of photochemically controlled OH and O<sub>3</sub> peak during the daytime, when incoming solar radiation levels are highest (Hard *et al.* 1986; Seinfeld and Pandis 2006b). Additionally, the ozonolysis of BVOCs has been shown to be a source of OH in the troposphere (Atkinson 1997; Paulson *et al.* 1997; Donahue *et al.* 1998; Herrmann *et al.* 2010). Whilst BVOC emissions are highest in the daytime, the lower concentrations to rise during the night (Janson *et al.* 2001; Hakola *et al.* 2012). NO<sub>3</sub> is rapidly photolysed during the daytime, but can accumulate at night (Atkinson *et al.* 1986; Mihelcic *et al.* 1993) which, together with lower OH and O<sub>3</sub> concentrations, means that NO<sub>3</sub> oxidation dominates night-time BVOC chemistry.

These oxidation reactions proceed mainly via addition to one of the C = C double bonds (O<sub>3</sub>, OH and NO<sub>3</sub>), or to a lesser extent, H-atom abstraction from C - H bonds (NO<sub>3</sub> and OH only) (Atkinson and Arey 2003). The oxidation reactions of monoterpenes have been

extensively studied in the laboratory and the first-stage oxidation products are well known (e.g. Sugarman and Daugherty 1956; Atkinson *et al.* 1984; Hatakeyama *et al.* 1989; Atkinson *et al.* 1990; Pandis *et al.* 1991; Hoffmann *et al.* 1997; Yu *et al.* 1999a; Bernard *et al.* 2012; Stewart *et al.* 2013). The OH-initiated oxidation of α-pinene proceeds mainly via OH addition to the double bond (~90%), with a smaller contribution from hydrogen abstraction, forming pinonaldehyde, acetone, formaldehyde and other hydroxycarbonyls (Hakola *et al.* 1994; Peeters *et al.* 2001). Ozonolysis of monoterpenes follows the *Criegee* mechanism (Criegee 1975); α-pinene has been shown to produce pinonic acid, norpinonic acid, pinonaldehyde and norpinonaldehyde (Yokouchi and Ambe 1985; Yu *et al.* 1998), via a *Criegee intermediate*. Whereas, oxidation of β-pinene by O<sub>3</sub> and OH has been shown to produce almost exclusively nopinone (6,6dimethylbicyclo[3.1.1]heptan-2-one) and formaldehyde (Yokouchi and Ambe 1985; Hatakeyama *et al.* 1989; Hakola *et al.* 1994; Aschmann *et al.* 1998; Winterhalter *et al.* 2000).

Isoprene					
Location	Time		Conc. (pptv)	Reference	
Pötsönvaara, Eastern Finland Mainly <i>Pinus sylvestris</i> forest. Samples collected approximately 100 m from forest.	Jun – Aug	D	68 - 346	Hakola <i>et al.</i> 2000	
Hyytiala, Finland Mixed forest (Pinus sylvestris, Picea abies,	Jun – Sep	- D -	> 140	Lappalainen <i>et al.</i> 2009	
Populus tremula, Betula pubescens, Alnus incana)	Oct – May		< 100		
Total Monoterpenes					
Oslo, Norway Picea abies and Pinus sylvestris forest. Samples collected within canopy.	June / Aug	D	8800 – 70700 (pptC)	Hov <i>et al.</i> 1983	
Jäadraås, Sweden Pinus sylvestris forest	June - Aug	D N	10 - 500 200 - 8000	Janson 1992	
Hyytiala, Finland Mixed forest (Pinus sylvestris, Picea abies,	Oct – Apr Jun – Aug	D	< 100 > 250	Lappalainen <i>et al.</i> 2009	
Populus tremula, Betula pubescens, Alnus incana)	Dec – May Jun – Aug Sep – Nov	M	3 - 96 129 - 508 16 - 257	Hakola <i>et al.</i> 2012	
Manaus, Brazil Undisturbed, mature rainforest in Central	Sep – Dec 2010	D	~ 600 - 800	Jardine et al. 2011	
Amazonia	2010	Ν	~ 200		
Total Sesquiterpenes					
Manaus, Brazil Undisturbed, mature rainforest in Central	Sep – Dec	D	150 - 250	Jardine et al. 2011	
Amazonia	2010	Ν	250 - 800		
Hyytiala, Finland	Dec – May		0.1 – 4.2		
Mixed forest (Pinus sylvestris, Picea abies, Populus tremula, Betula pubescens, Alnus	Jun – Aug	М	2.3	Hakola <i>et al.</i> 2012	
incana)	Sep – Nov		0.7 - 13		

Table 1.2: Summary of ambient BVOC concentration measurements; D indicates a day time measurement, N a night time measurement, and M a monthly mean.

Laboratory oxidation of isoprene by OH and O<sub>3</sub> has been shown to yield predominantly formaldehyde, methacrolein (MTA) and methyl vinyl ketone (MVK) (Kamens *et al.* 1982; Tuazon and Atkinson 1990; Paulson *et al.* 1992a, 1992b; Grosjean *et al.* 1993; Atkinson and Arey 2003). When isoprene reacts with OH, peroxyradicals (RO<sub>2</sub>) are generated which may react further with nitrogen oxide, or recombine to form peroxides. The peroxyradicals may also undergo internal reactions, yielding organic hydroperoxy radicals, eventually resulting in net OH production and leading to high OH concentrations over pristine forest regions (Lelieveld *et al.* 2008; Peeters *et al.* 2009; Taraborrelli *et al.* 2012). Oxidation of isoprene with NO<sub>3</sub> yields mainly alkyl nitrates, but also small quantities of formaldehyde, MVK and MTA (Barnes *et al.* 1990; Kwok *et al.* 1996).

### 1.2.4.3 Biogenic Secondary Organic Aerosol (SOA)

As originally suggested by Went (1960a), the oxidation products of BVOCs may partition into the particle phase, forming secondary organic aerosol (SOA) (e.g. Kavouras *et al.* 1998; O'Dowd *et al.* 2002; Kanakidou *et al.* 2005; Kroll and Seinfeld 2008; Jimenez *et al.* 2009). Semi-volatile gas-phase organic compounds may reach equilibrium with absorbing material in the particle phase (Pankow 1994a, 1994b), adding to the existing organic mass in the aerosol distribution (Odum *et al.* 1996). Extremely lowvolatility compounds (i.e. those with saturation concentrations less than approximately  $10^{-3} \ \mu g \ m^{-3}$ ) may condense kinetically onto the surface of existing particles, at a rate controlled by the difference between the ambient partial pressure of the substance and its equilibrium vapour pressure over the particle surface (Donahue *et al.* 2011; Pierce *et al.* 2011; Riipinen *et al.* 2011; Zhang *et al.* 2012). Very low-volatility compounds may also be formed via reactions in the particle phase, following which their re-evaporation would be inhibited (Riipinen *et al.* 2012). The importance of these processes is discussed further in *Chapter 5.*  Oxidation products of isoprene, monoterpenes and sesquiterpenes have been observed in ambient aerosol (Kavouras *et al.* 1999; Yu *et al.* 1999b; Claeys *et al.* 2004; Jaoui *et al.* 2007). Over Scandinavia, parcels of air have been found to contain an aerosol mass that is proportional to the length of time the air has spent over forested land (Tunved *et al.* 2006; Tunved *et al.* 2008). Whilst their presence is widely observed, the exact formation mechanisms and subsequent behaviours of these semi- and low- volatility BVOC oxidation products remain unclear.

The first stage oxidation products of isoprene (e.g. MVK and MTA) are too volatile to partition into the aerosol phase, originally leading to the conclusion that isoprene oxidation does not generate SOA (Pandis et al. 1991). However, further oxidation of these first generation products has been shown to yield lower volatility 2-methyltetrols in smog chamber experiments (Edney et al. 2005), compounds which have also been observed in aerosol collected from forest locations in the Amazon (Claevs et al. 2004; Wang et al. 2005), Scandinavia (Kourtchev et al. 2005), central Europe (Ion et al. 2005) and the USA (Ding et al. 2008). Employing smog chamber experiments and field measurements, Lin et al. (2013) suggest that methacrylic acid epoxide (MAE), formed by isoprene oxidation under low NO<sub>x</sub> conditions, via methacryloylperoxynitrate (MPAN), could act as a precursor to SOA formation. Laboratory studies suggest that SOA formation from isoprene oxidation occurs at a low mass yield, e.g. between 0.9% and 5% (Kroll et al. 2005, 2006); depending upon conditions such as temperature, relative humidity and NO<sub>x</sub> concentration (Pandis et al. 1991; Edney et al. 2005). However, due to the large global isoprene source (~535 Tg a<sup>-1</sup>; Guenther et al. 2012), even a low yield would produce a substantial amount of SOA. Laboratory production of SOA from isoprene oxidation has been shown to be highly sensitive to NO<sub>x</sub> concentration; at low initial NO<sub>x</sub> concentrations (< 150 ppb), SOA yields increase with increasing NO<sub>x</sub> concentration, but at high initial NO<sub>x</sub> concentration (> 200 ppb) SOA yield tends to decrease with increasing NO<sub>x</sub> concentration (Kroll et al. 2006).

Chamber studies of the SOA formation from monoterpene oxidation suggest higher yields than those observed for isoprene (e.g. Hatakeyama *et al.* 1991; Hoffmann *et al.* 1997; Presto *et al.* 2005; Ng *et al.* 2007); for example, Hoffmann *et al.* (1997) obtained mass yields of 12.5% for  $\alpha$ -pinene, and 30.2% for  $\beta$ -pinene. For sesquiterpene oxidation, laboratory derived yields of SOA formation can be very high, for example Ng *et al.* (2007) observed mass yields of greater than 100% for the oxidation of longifolene.

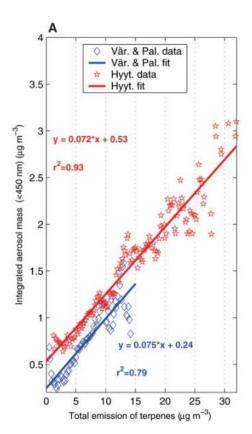


Figure 1.9: Average observed aerosol mass versus total estimated emission of monoterpenes at Hyytiälä (red), Pallas and Värriö (blue), in Finland; reproduced from Tunved *et al.* (2006).

However, extrapolating laboratory derived yields for SOA formation to the atmosphere is not straightforward. To obtain reliable yields, chamber experiments must be conducted at higher than atmospherically relevant initial BVOC concentrations in order to achieve acceptable signal-to-noise ratios (Presto *et al.* 2005) and overcome losses to the chamber walls (Kroll *et al.* 2005, 2006). An alternative approach is to correlate the measured amount of aerosol mass added with an estimate of the BVOC emission encountered during the trajectory of an air parcel. For example, Tunved *et al.* (2006) derive an

apparent mass yield for the formation of SOA from monoterpene oxidation that ranges between 5 and 10% (Figure 1.9). This approach, however, cannot account for the role of atmospheric sinks (of BVOCs or their oxidation products) and may therefore underestimate the yield. Equally, all increase in aerosol mass is attributed to BVOC emission, which may lead to an overestimate.

#### **1.2.4.4 Organically-Mediated New Particle Formation**

As well as partitioning into the existing atmospheric aerosol distribution, the oxidation products of terpenes may play a role in the initial stages of new particle formation (see *Chapters 2* and *3* for more details on new particle formation), via stabilisation of the critical nucleus (Fan *et al.* 2006; Zhang *et al.* 2009; Metzger *et al.* 2010; Paasonen *et al.* 2010; Kulmala *et al.* 2013). In contrast, both laboratory (Kiendler-Scharr *et al.* 2009) and field experiments (Kanawade *et al.* 2011) indicate that isoprene emissions may act to suppress new particle formation in the presence of high isoprene to monoterpene emission ratios, although the mechanism through which this process operates is not known.

#### **1.2.4.5** Global SOA Budget

Due to uncertainties in the distribution and strength of BVOC emission sources (Section 1.2.4.1), the amount of SOA produced from BVOC oxidation and the exact nature of its behaviour in the atmosphere, the global budget of SOA is poorly constrained. Estimates derived by modelling emissions and applying laboratory derived yields to BVOC oxidation suggest a global SOA production between 12 and 70 Tg(SOA) a<sup>-1</sup> (Kanakidou *et al.* 2005), whilst top-down estimates based on satellite observations or atmospheric mass balance are an order of magnitude larger, up to 1820 Tg(SOA) a<sup>-1</sup> (Goldstein and Galbally 2007; Hallquist *et al.* 2009; Heald *et al.* 2010; assuming a conversion factor of 2 Tg(SOA) / Tg(C) to convert from literature values; Spracklen *et al.* (2011b)).

Additionally, there may be a contribution to SOA directly from anthropogenic precursors (e.g. toluene and xylene), or an anthropogenic enhancement of the biogenic source (Weber *et al.* 2007). Spracklen *et al.* (2011b) derive an optimised SOA source of  $140 \pm 90 \text{ Tg}(\text{SOA}) \text{ a}^{-1}$ , by comparing simulated organic aerosol formation (from biogenic and anthropogenic precursors) with aerosol mass spectrometer measurements, and suggest an important role for *anthropogenically controlled* SOA. This suggestion is consistent with Heald *et al.* (2011) who find the best agreement between simulated and observed organic aerosol mass concentrations when 100 Tg of *anthropogenically controlled* SOA is added to their simulations.

# 1.2.4.6 Climatic Impact of Biogenic SOA

Whilst organic aerosol has been found to dominate the mass of fine aerosol at sites across the world (Zhang *et al.* 2007; Jimenez *et al.* 2009), its impact on the climate remains poorly constrained (Mahowald *et al.* 2011). The presence of SOA can potentially influence the Earth's radiative balance *directly* by contributing to the absorption or scattering of radiation, and *indirectly* by altering the microphysical properties of clouds (Forster *et al.* 2007).

#### **1.2.4.6.1** The Direct Radiative Effect of SOA

Particles in the atmosphere interact *directly* with incoming solar radiation; whether, and by how much, they subsequently scatter or absorb the radiation is dependent upon their size, chemical composition and optical properties (Hegg *et al.* 1997; Penner *et al.* 2001; Ramaswamy *et al.* 2001). Incoming solar radiation peaks at wavelengths between 380 nm and 750 nm, so processes that add particles of this size to the atmosphere, or aid in the growth of smaller particles to these sizes (such as the condensation of secondary organic material) will influence the path of radiation in the atmosphere.

The annual global direct radiative effect from biogenic SOA has been previously estimated at between -0.01 W m<sup>-2</sup> and -0.29 W m<sup>-2</sup> (Goto *et al.* 2008; O'Donnell *et al.* 2011; Rap *et al.* 2013), but regional effects may be much larger, e.g. summertime mean of between -0.37 W m<sup>-2</sup> and -0.74 W m<sup>-2</sup> over boreal regions (Lihavainen *et al.* 2009) and up to -1 W m<sup>-2</sup> over tropical forest regions (Rap *et al.* 2013).

The ability of a particle to scatter radiation may be described by its wavelength dependent, single scattering albedo ( $\omega$ ), i.e. the ratio of radiation scattered to the total of radiation scattered and absorbed, and its complex refractive index (*k*). Aerosol components that are efficient at scattering radiation have a high value of  $\omega$  (e.g.,  $\omega$  for sulphate is close to 1 at 550 nm), and efficient absorbers of radiation, such as black carbon, have a lower  $\omega$ .

The optical properties of SOA are not well known, owing to the range of possible compositions, and the practical limitations of measuring optical parameters under atmospherically relevant conditions. Nakayama *et al.* (2010) found that SOA formed from the photo-oxidation of  $\alpha$ -pinene did not absorb UV radiation (at either 355 or 532 nm), and Lambe *et al.* (2013) found a  $\omega$  value between 0.99 and 1 for  $\alpha$ -pinene SOA (at 405 nm).

## 1.2.4.6.2 The First Aerosol Indirect Radiative Effect of SOA

The presence of particles in the atmosphere facilitates the formation of cloud droplets at much lower supersaturations (*SS*, relative humidity minus 100%) than would be required for the homogenous nucleation of pure water droplets. Only a subset of particles, known as cloud condensation nuclei (CCN), are able to form cloud droplets under atmospherically relevant conditions.

The ability of a particle to act as a CCN, at a given *SS*, depends approximately upon the number of potential solute molecules it contains, determined by its size and chemical composition (Dusek *et al.* 2006; McFiggans *et al.* 2006). At atmospherically relevant values of *SS*, across a range of compositions, CCN-active particles are typically sized between 50 and 150 nm diameter. As such, atmospheric processes that influence the amount of water-soluble material in ~50-150 nm diameter particles will affect CCN concentrations.

The presence of SOA can affect CCN number concentrations in several ways. The condensation of organic compounds is known to aid in the growth of newly formed particles to observable sizes (> 3nm) and beyond, to a CCN-active size (Boy *et al.* 2003; Kulmala *et al.* 2004; Verheggen *et al.* 2007; Laaksonen *et al.* 2008; Pierce *et al.* 2011; Riipinen *et al.* 2011; Yli-Juuti *et al.* 2011; Pierce *et al.* 2012; Riccobono *et al.* 2012; Riipinen *et al.* 2012). Additionally, condensing organic oxidation products may make hydrophobic particles more hydrophilic (e.g. Petters *et al.* 2006), and may also play a role in new particle formation (Section 1.2.4.4). SOA formed in the laboratory from the oxidation of isoprene and monoterpenes has been shown to exhibit CCN activity under atmospherically relevant conditions (Duplissy *et al.* 2008; Engelhart *et al.* 2008; Engelhart *et al.* 2011).

If the CCN concentration in the atmosphere increases, and a fixed cloud water content is assumed, the average size of cloud droplets formed will decrease, making the cloud more reflective. This is the basis of the *first aerosol indirect*, or *cloud albedo*, effect (Twomey 1977; Lohmann and Feichter 2005).

Several studies suggest a large first aerosol indirect effect (AIE) from biogenic SOA over the boreal forests at high northern latitudes. Using the global aerosol microphysics model GLOMAP, Spracklen *et al.* (2008a) simulated a doubling of regional CCN concentrations as a result of monoterpene emissions, and calculated a subsequent regional AIE of between -1.8 and -6.7 W m<sup>-2</sup> of boreal forest. A stronger annual indirect forcing (locally between -5 and -14 W m<sup>-2</sup>) was calculated by Kurten *et al.* (2003) using measurements taken at a station in Finland. On a global scale, the AIE from biogenic SOA is weaker, and previous estimates range from -0.19 W m<sup>-2</sup> to +0.23 W m<sup>-2</sup> (Goto *et al.* 2008; O'Donnell *et al.* 2011; Rap *et al.* 2013).

# **1.3** Anthropogenic Climate Change

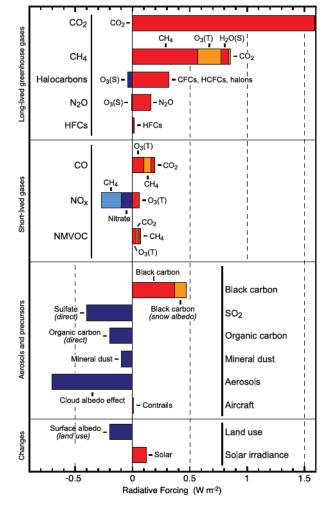
Whilst many greenhouse gas (GHG) and aerosol species are naturally present in the Earth's atmosphere, over the past two centuries there have been significant increases in their concentrations as a result of anthropogenic activities; in particular, the large scale combustion of fossil fuels for energy, land use changes and biomass burning (Houghton 2003; van der Werf *et al.* 2004; Forster *et al.* 2007). Accompanying these anthropogenic emissions has been an increase in global annual mean surface temperature of approximately 0.8 K (Trenberth *et al.* 2007; Morice *et al.* 2012).

#### **1.3.1** Drivers of Climate Change

## 1.3.1.1 Greenhouse Gases

Carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>) is an unreactive gas generated during the combustion of fossil fuels and biomass, or flared directly into the atmosphere. Whilst CO<sub>2</sub> is constantly exchanged between the atmosphere, land and ocean, its lack of chemical reactivity leads to a long atmospheric residence time. Approximately 50% of emitted CO<sub>2</sub> will be removed (i.e. partitioned amongst the ocean and land carbon sinks) from the atmosphere within the first 30 years, a further 30% within the next few centuries, and the remainder may stay in the atmosphere for several thousands of years (Denman *et al.* 2007). The global annual mean atmospheric concentration of CO<sub>2</sub> reached 394 ppmv in 2012 (NOAA 2013); approximately 40% above the pre-industrial (i.e. pre-1750) level of 280 ppm, and unprecedented during the past 650 000 years (Solomon *et al.* 2007). The atmospheric concentrations of other GHGs (methane, nitrous oxide, halocarbons and ozone) have also increased (Forster *et al.* 2007).

Figure 1.10 details the best estimate RF (see Section 1.1) values attributed to the increase in atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration (+1.66  $\pm$  0.17 W m<sup>-2</sup>), and other long- and short-lived



GHGs in 2005, since 1750, from the Fourth Assessment Report (AR4) of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC; Forster *et al.* 2007).

Figure 1.10: Components of anthropogenic radiative forcing in 2005, relative to 1750, for principal emissions; (S) and (T) represent stratospheric and tropospheric contributions respectively. Reproduced from Forster *et al.* (2007).

# 1.3.1.2 Aerosol Species

Whilst the estimated net anthropogenic RF from 1750 to 2005 is positive (approximately  $\pm 1.6 \text{ W m}^{-2}$ ), there is a substantial negative RF from anthropogenically driven changes to aerosol concentrations (Figure 1.10). The IPCC AR4 best estimate of the aerosol *direct* RF (-0.5  $\pm$  0.4 W m<sup>-2</sup>; Forster *et al.* 2007) represents a combination of modelled (e.g. Schulz *et al.* 2006) and observationally (e.g. Bellouin *et al.* 2005) derived values, and is consistent with more recent model (Quaas *et al.* 2009; Bellouin *et al.* 2011; Bellouin *et al* 

*al.* 2013a; Myhre *et al.* 2013; Rap *et al.* 2013) and satellite-derived estimates (Bellouin *et al.* 2008; Myhre 2009). The aerosol first *indirect* RF (*cloud albedo effect* in Figure 1.10) from anthropogenic emissions since 1750 is estimated by the IPCC at -0.7 W m<sup>-2</sup> (median value), with a 5 - 95% range of -1.8 to -0.3 W m<sup>-2</sup> (Forster *et al.* 2007). This wide range of values highlights the difficulty in constraining this complex parameter, as it relies upon a combined quantitative understanding of changes to global aerosol concentrations, as well as the process of cloud droplet activation under various conditions. Subsequent estimates of the first indirect RF, using more sophisticated aerosol microphysics models lie in the middle of AR4 range (Quaas *et al.* 2009; Bellouin *et al.* 2013a; Rap *et al.* 2013); however, observationally derived values are consistently lower in absolute magnitude (Quaas *et al.* 2008; Penner *et al.* 2011; Bellouin *et al.* 2013b).

## 1.3.1.3 Land-use Change

As a result of the carbon stored within terrestrial ecosystems, a considerable emission of carbon can be associated with the process of land-use and land cover change (LULCC), predominantly through the decay and burning of vegetation when forest is converted to agricultural land. Over the period 1990-2009, the mean estimate of global emissions from LULCC was  $1.14 \pm 0.18$  Pg(C) a<sup>-1</sup> (Houghton *et al.* 2012), equivalent to approximately 12.5% of annual carbon emissions from fossil fuel combustion and cement production during the 2000–2009 period (Friedlingstein *et al.* 2010).

Pongratz *et al.* (2011) estimate an RF of +0.35 W m<sup>-2</sup> due to CO<sub>2</sub> emission from historical LULCC between AD 800 and 1992. However, since the albedo of agricultural land can be substantially higher than the forested ground it replaced, LULCC since 1750 has also resulted in a negative RF of -0.2  $\pm$  0.2 W m<sup>-2</sup> due to surface albedo increase (Figure 1.10; Forster *et al.* 2007; Pongratz *et al.* 2011).

# **1.3.2** Climate Change Mitigation

Using a variety of projected emission scenarios (Nakicenovic *et al.* 2000), and an ensemble of climate simulations, the IPCC estimated a rise in global surface temperature between 1.1 and 6.4 K by 2100 (relative to 1980 – 1999 mean; Meehl *et al.* 2007). To limit the potential future temperature increase, global anthropogenic greenhouse gas emissions must be reduced. Much climate change mitigation policy, e.g. the Copenhagen Accord (UNFCCC 2009), focuses on limiting global mean warming to 2 K above pre-industrial temperature. The aspiration to limit warming to 2 K is based on suggestions that critical thresholds may be breached and unmanageable climatic changes could occur if the global mean temperature increase exceeds 2 K; for example, widespread coral mortality, major loss of rainforests, partial deglaciation of Greenland and the West Antarctic Ice Sheet, 20-30% of species committed to extinction, and widespread water stress in Africa and Latin America (e.g. Parry *et al.* 2007; Lenton *et al.* 2008; Rockstrom *et al.* 2009).

Due to the long atmospheric residence time of  $CO_2$ , cumulative emissions until any given year are of greater relevance to the  $CO_2$  concentration and therefore radiative forcing, than the emissions in any specific year. Zickfeld *et al.* (2009) found that cumulative  $CO_2$ emissions from 2000 to 2500 must not exceed a median estimate of 590 Pg(C) in order to stabilise global mean temperature within 2 K of pre-industrial levels. Using a series of climate emulations for the next century, Meinshausen *et al.* (2009) found that even if GHG emission levels in 2050 are reduced to 50% of 2000 levels (i.e. 20 Gt(CO<sub>2</sub> equivalent) a<sup>-1</sup>), there is still up to a 49% probability that the global mean temperature rise will exceed 2 K by 2100.

Globally, anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions are rising each year, reaching  $9.5 \pm 0.5$  Pg(C) in 2011, with 2012 emissions estimated at  $9.7 \pm 0.5$  Pg(C) (Peters *et al.* 2013). In 2015, the UNFCCC will review the 2 K target and potentially revise it downward to 1.5 K;

however, emission trajectories that limit temperature increase to 1.5 K tend to assume that negative  $CO_2$  emissions (for example through bioenergy with carbon capture and storage) will be possible by the end of the century (Peters *et al.* 2013; Rogelj *et al.* 2013).

Wise *et al.* (2009) found that the most efficient way to limit projected GHG emissions was to value carbon emissions from terrestrial land sources equally alongside those from energy and industrial systems; e.g. if only fossil fuel carbon emissions are taxed, demand for bioenergy, and therefore deforestation, will increase. Likewise, Rogelj *et al.* (2013) concluded that "the full potential of land-based mitigation measures seems to be required in our scenarios to achieve the 2 °C target".

Due to the high heat capacity of the oceans, potential future decreases in atmospheric  $CO_2$  concentration will not be accompanied by immediate temperature reductions. Using an Earth system model of intermediate complexity, Matthews and Caldeira (2008) demonstrated that following an instantaneous pulse of  $CO_2$ , temperatures increased immediately, but did not reduce significantly for the next 500 years, despite a lack of further emissions. This suggests that to achieve a stabilisation of global temperatures it is preferable not to pass through higher concentrations of  $CO_2$ , on the way to  $CO_2$  stabilisation, since there will be a delay in realising the subsequent temperature reductions.

# 1.3.2.1 The Role of Forest Management in Climate Change Mitigation

A reduction in deforestation, deliberate and managed reforestation or afforestation on a large scale, could all potentially increase  $CO_2$  sequestration from the atmosphere and are already being encouraged. The 1997 UN Kyoto Protocol stated that Annex 1 countries should implement policies or further elaborate existing policies such as "protection and enhancement of sinks and reservoirs of greenhouse gases not controlled by the Montreal Protocol" and "promotion of sustainable forest management practices, afforestation and

reforestation". Documentation from the most recent UN Climate Change Conference in 2012 (COP-18), reiterated the sentiments of previous meetings (COP-11 onwards e.g. UNFCCC 2010) that efforts should be made to reduce emissions from deforestation and encourage the conservation and enhancement of carbon stocks (UNFCCC 2012). The UN-REDD (Reducing Emissions from Deforestation and forest Degradation) programme, and the extension REDD+, aims to reduce forest loss in developing countries by introducing financial mechanisms to benefit countries that preserve the carbon stocks in their forests (e.g. Gullison *et al.* 2007; Angelsen and Wetrtz-Kanounnikoff 2008); at present, 16 developing countries are engaged in national scale REDD programmes (United Nations 2013). However, there are concerns that a focus on promoting carbon storage could jeopardise the conservation of low-biomass ecosystems and human rights (e.g. Brown *et al.* 2008; Dooley *et al.* 2008).

Reducing deforestation rates by 50% by 2050 (relative to rates observed in the 1990s), and maintaining them at that level until 2100 would avoid the direct release of approximately 50 Pg(C) (Gullison *et al.* 2007); equivalent to 5 years of fossil fuel carbon emissions. Using a dynamic vegetation model (LPJmL) and climatologies obtained using 5 different GCMs, Gumpenberger *et al.* (2010) found that tropical carbon stocks in 2100 decreased by between 35 and 134 Pg(C), relative to 2012, under a continued deforestation scenario (i.e. until 50% of forest in each grid cell remains), whereas under a forest protection scenario (i.e. forested fraction of grid cell held fixed) tropical carbon stocks increased by between 7 and 121 Pg(C).

Whilst preserved or increased forest cover would enhance  $CO_2$  sequestration, forests also exert the biogeophysical impacts discussed in Section 1.2.3; as such the overall climatic impact of modifications to forest area will be location specific. Pongratz *et al.* (2011) found that historical anthropogenic land-use change in temperate and boreal regions has occurred on the most productive land, thereby generating higher than average (i.e. for a particular latitude)  $CO_2$  emissions. Subsequently, reforestation of these areas could induce a negative radiative effect from  $CO_2$  sequestration that would outweigh the positive radiative effect of albedo increase. Arora and Montenegro (2011) found that gradually replacing cropland in an Earth system model (CanESM1) with forests reduced the simulated global mean temperature for 2081-2100 by 0.45 K. The biogeophysical component of this change yielded a global mean temperature change of 0 K (with simulated warming at high latitudes balancing cooling in the tropics), and the temperature reduction occurred entirely due to increased carbon sequestration. The climate impact of changing BVOC emission levels due to land-use change, via the biogeochemical pathway described in Figure 1.7, has not previously been assessed.

# 1.4 Aims of Thesis

The aim of this thesis is to determine the climatic significance of secondary organic aerosol formed via the oxidation of biogenic volatile organic compounds. In particular, the magnitude of the SOA effect from forests, and the implication for the role of forests in climate change mitigation will be explored.

In *Chapter 2*, the detailed aerosol microphysics model (GLOMAP) used in this thesis is described, with a particular emphasis on the representation of secondary organic aerosol.

In *Chapter 3*, this microphysics model is used to examine the role of biogenic SOA in the atmosphere and the following questions are answered:

- what impact does the presence of biogenic SOA have on particle concentrations in the present-day atmosphere?
- how sensitive is this impact to the representation of new particle formation, the amount of SOA generated from BVOC oxidation, the nature of primary carbonaceous emissions, and the presence of anthropogenic emissions?
- how does the inclusion of biogenic SOA affect agreement between observations and simulated particle concentrations?

In *Chapter 4* the impact of biogenic SOA on the climate will be quantified using an offline radiative transfer model in order to establish:

- the *direct* radiative effect of the changes to particle number and size, due to biogenic SOA, determined in *Chapter 3*
- the impact of these changes to particle number and size on cloud droplet number concentration
- the *indirect* radiative effect of this change to cloud droplet number concentration

In *Chapter 5*, specific assumptions concerning the volatility treatment of biogenic SOA in global models will be examined, and the following points addressed:

- how do global aerosol models differ in their representation of secondary organic aerosol?
- what are the implications of these differing representations when calculating the climate impact of biogenic SOA?

In *Chapter 6*, the radiative impact of biogenic SOA from particular forested regions will be quantified and compared to other forest impacts, in order to establish:

- the magnitude of the radiative effect due to forest derived biogenic SOA
- how this radiative effect may influence the net climatic impact of forests

# **Chapter 2: Model Description**

This chapter describes the global aerosol microphysics model (GLOMAP-mode) used in *Chapters 3* to 6. An offline radiative transfer model and land-surface model are introduced and described in Chapters 4 and 6, respectively.

# 2.1 Introduction to GLOMAP

The GLObal Model of Aerosol Processes (GLOMAP) was developed at the University of Leeds (Spracklen 2005; Spracklen *et al.* 2005a, 2005b; Pringle 2006) and is an extension to the TOMCAT three-dimensional, Eulerian, chemical transport model (Chipperfield 2006). TOMCAT-GLOMAP has a horizontal resolution of  $2.8^{\circ} \times 2.8^{\circ}$  (T42) with 31  $\sigma$ -pressure levels (i.e., terrain following at the surface), extending to 10 hPa. GLOMAP is a global aerosol microphysics model, calculating the size, number concentration and chemical composition of aerosol. It includes representations of nucleation, particle growth via coagulation, condensation and cloud processing, and wet/dry deposition; these processes are summarised in Figure 2.1 and will be described in detail in the following chapter.

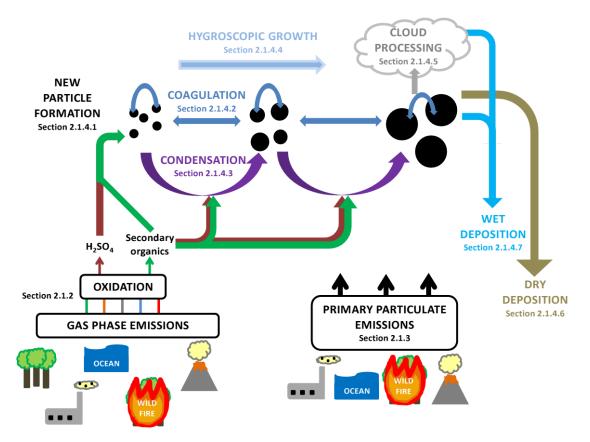


Figure 2.1: Summary of main processes included in the GLOMAP model.

# 2.1.1 Representation of the Aerosol Size Distribution

The work described in this thesis uses the modal version of GLOMAP (Mann *et al.* 2010), in which information about aerosol component masses and number concentrations (i.e., two moment) is carried in five log-normal size modes, based on the "pseudo modal" M7/HAM approach (Vignati *et al.* 2004; Stier *et al.* 2005). This modal approach, depicted in Figure 2.2, contrasts with the original sectional version of GLOMAP, in which the aerosol distribution is represented by 20 size sections, or bins (e.g. Spracklen *et al.* 2005a; Spracklen *et al.* 2008b; Merikanto *et al.* 2009; Korhonen *et al.* 2010; Reddington *et al.* 2011; Dunne *et al.* 2012). The modal scheme is designed to allow longer integrations with greater computational efficiency and has been shown to compare well with the sectional version and observations (Mann *et al.* 2010; Woodhouse *et al.* 2010; Browse *et al.* 2012; Mann *et al.* 2012; Schmidt *et al.* 2012).

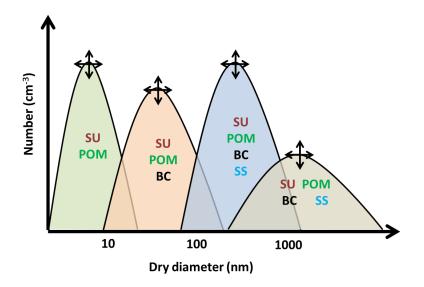


Figure 2.2: Schematic of the aerosol number size distribution, as represented by GLOMAP-mode. Components are classified as: sulphate (SU), particulate organic matter (POM), black carbon (BC) and sea-salt (SS).

In the configuration used for this work, material in the particle phase is classified as one of four components: sulphate (SU), black carbon (BC), particulate organic matter (POM) and sea-salt (SS), with each component allowed into the modes specified in Table 2.1. Four of the size modes are treated as hydrophilic (nucleation, Aitken, accumulation and coarse), with an additional non-hydrophilic Aitken mode.

Mode	Size range	Components	Treated as soluble?	Geometric standard deviation, $\sigma_g$
Nucleation	$D_g < 10 \text{ nm}$	SU, POM	Yes	1.59
Aitken	$10 < D_g < 100 \text{ nm}$	SU, BC, POM	Yes	1.59
		BC, POM	No	1.59
Accumulation	$100 \text{ nm} < D_g < 1 \mu \text{m}$	SU, BC, POM, SS	Yes	1.4
Coarse	$D_g > 1 \mu m$	SU, BC, POM, SS	Yes	2.0

Table 2.1: Summary of GLOMAP-mode configuration;  $D_g$  is the geometric mean diameter and  $\sigma_g$  is the geometric standard deviation of each mode. Based on Mann *et al.* (2010), as modified by Mann *et al.* (2012).

Each mode has a fixed geometric mean standard deviation ( $\sigma_g$ ) and contains particles with a range of geometric mean diameters ( $D_g$ ), as described in Table 2.1.  $D_g$  for each mode *i* is calculated as in Eqn. 2.1, where  $V_{dry_i}$  is the total dry volume over all components *j* in that mode.

$$D_{g_i} = \left(\frac{6V_{dry_i}}{\pi \exp(4.5 \log^2 \sigma_{g,i})}\right)^{\frac{1}{3}}$$
(2.1)

 $V_{dry_i}$  is calculated as in Eqn. 2.2, according to the number of molecules per particle of component  $(m_{ij})$ , Avogadro's constant  $(N_a)$ , and the density  $(\rho_j)$  and molar mass  $(M_j)$  of each component, given in Table 2.2.

$$V_{dry_i} = \sum_{j} \left( \frac{m_{ij} M_j}{N_a \rho_j} \right) \tag{2.2}$$

Compone	nt	Summary of main sources	<b>Density</b> (kg m <sup>-3</sup> )	Molar mass (g mol <sup>-1</sup> )
Sulphate	SU	Volcanic eruptions, power plants, industry, road transport, shipping, domestic biofuel combustion, wildfires, marine biosphere	1769	98.0
Black Carbon	BC	Wildfires, fossil fuel combustion, biofuel combustion	1500	12.0
Particulate Organic Matter	POM	Wildfires, fossil fuel combustion, biofuel combustion, vegetation	1500	16.8
Sea-salt	SS	Oceans	1600	58.4

Table 2.2: Characteristics of GLOMAP-mode components included in this configuration.

 $D_g$  for each mode varies with time as the aerosol size distribution evolves; when  $D_g$  for a particular mode exceeds the upper limit of the size ranges given in Table 2.1, a fraction of the particle number and mass is transferred to the adjacent mode (fractions calculated as in Equations 57 and 58 of Mann *et al.* 2010).

# 2.1.2 Gas-Phase Emissions and Processes

In this work, six-hourly mean concentrations of the hydroxyl radical (OH), ozone (O<sub>3</sub>), the nitrate radical (NO<sub>3</sub>), the hydroperoxy radical (HO<sub>2</sub>) and hydrogen peroxide (H<sub>2</sub>O<sub>2</sub>) are prescribed from a previous TOMCAT simulation (Arnold *et al.* 2005). The treatment of H<sub>2</sub>O<sub>2</sub> is semi-prognostic; in low-level clouds, it is depleted by oxidation of S(IV)

(generating S(VI)), and replenished by self-reaction of HO<sub>2</sub> (Jones *et al.* 2001; Seinfeld and Pandis 2006a).

## 2.1.2.1 Sulphur Emissions and Gas-Phase Chemistry

The sulphur chemistry included in GLOMAP-mode is detailed in Table 2.3. Phytoplankton emissions of dimethyl-sulphide (DMS) are calculated online using monthly sea-water DMS concentrations from Kettle and Andreae (2000), wind-speed and sea-air gas exchange. Gas-phase sulphur dioxide (SO<sub>2</sub>) emissions for the year 2000 are included from anthropogenic sources (Cofala *et al.* 2005) and wildfires (van der Werf *et al.* 2004); additionally, SO<sub>2</sub> from both continuous (Andres and Kasgnoc 1998) and explosive (Halmer *et al.* 2002) volcanic eruptions is included.

There are no emission inventories for carbon disulphide (CS<sub>2</sub>) or carbonyl sulphide (COS). In GLOMAP-mode, anthropogenic sources of CS<sub>2</sub> and COS, such as biomass burning, automobile exhausts and chemical industries (Khalil and Rasmussen 1984), are represented by a constant molar emission in proportion (0.3% and 0.08% respectively) to anthropogenic SO<sub>2</sub> emission levels (Pham *et al.* 1995). Biogenic sources of CS<sub>2</sub> and COS are represented by a constant molar emission at 1% of the calculated DMS emission level (Bates *et al.* 1992).

	Reaction	Reference
DMS + OH	$\rightarrow$ SO <sub>2</sub>	Atkinson et al. 1989
DMS + OH	$\rightarrow$ 0.6 SO <sub>2</sub> + 0.4 DMSO	Pham <i>et al.</i> 1995
DMSO + OH	$\rightarrow$ 0.6 SO <sub>2</sub> + 0.4 MSA	Pham <i>et al.</i> 1995
$DMS + NO_3$	$\rightarrow$ SO <sub>2</sub>	Atkinson et al. 1989
$CS_2 + OH$	$\rightarrow$ SO <sub>2</sub> + COS	Pham <i>et al.</i> 1995
COS + OH	$\rightarrow$ SO <sub>2</sub>	Pham <i>et al.</i> 1995
$SO_2 + OH$	$\rightarrow$ H <sub>2</sub> SO <sub>4</sub>	Pham <i>et al.</i> 1995

Table 2.3: Sulphur based reactions included in GLOMAP-mode (Spracklen et al. 2005a).

## 2.1.2.2 BVOC Emissions and Gas-Phase Chemistry

In the standard version of GLOMAP-mode, used in Chapters 3, 4 and 5, monthly mean emissions of monoterpenes and isoprene are taken from the Global Emissions InitiAtive (GEIA; www.geiacenter.org/) database. This inventory was compiled using the emission factors presented by Guenther et al. (1995) and the vegetation distribution of Olson (1992), giving total emissions of 127 Tg(C)  $a^{-1}$  for monoterpenes and 503 Tg(C)  $a^{-1}$  for isoprene. Figure 2.3 shows the spatial distribution of monoterpene and isoprene emissions in the GEIA database, for January and July. In the tropical regions of South America, Africa and South-east Asia, emissions of both monoterpenes and isoprene are high throughout the year. In the GEIA inventory, 78% and 87% of the global total emission, of monoterpenes and isoprene respectively, originate from between 30°S and 30°N. In northern temperate and boreal regions, wintertime monoterpene emissions are low, and isoprene emissions are negligible (Figure 2.3, *left*). In the northern hemisphere summertime (Figure 2.3, right) emissions of BVOCs rise to a level comparable with the tropics (Figure 2.3, right). In Chapter 6, emissions are calculated offline using the Model of Emissions of Gases and Aerosols from Nature version 2.1 (MEGAN2.1; Guenther et al. 2012).

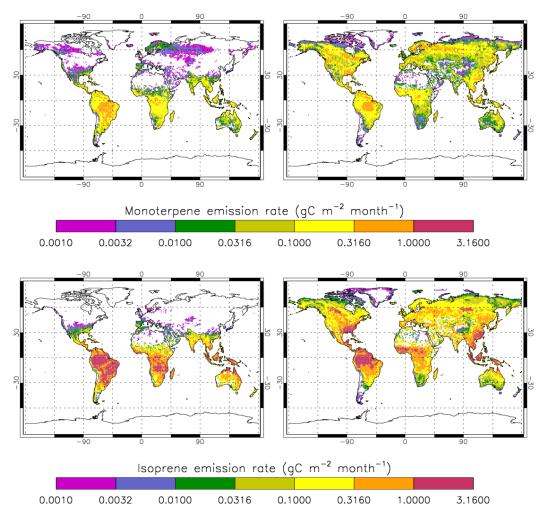


Figure 2.3: Monthly mean monoterpene (upper) and isoprene (lower) emission rates during January (left) and July (right) from the GEIA inventory (Guenther *et al.* 1995).

The amount of secondary organic material generated by the oxidation of BVOCs in the atmosphere is uncertain (Section 1.2.4.5). As with previous GLOMAP studies (e.g. Spracklen *et al.* 2006; Spracklen *et al.* 2008a; Spracklen *et al.* 2011b), and many other global-scale modelling approaches (e.g. Boy *et al.* 2006; Dentener *et al.* 2006; Makkonen *et al.* 2009; Pierce *et al.* 2013), a fixed molar yield is applied to SOA generation from BVOC oxidation. The oxidation reaction rates used are detailed in Table 2.4; all monoterpenes are prescribed the reaction characteristics of  $\alpha$ -pinene, the most highly emitted compound.

Reaction	<b>Rate coefficient</b> (cm <sup>3</sup> s <sup>-1</sup> )
$\alpha$ -pinene + OH	$1.2 \text{ x } 10^{-11} \exp(444/\text{T})$
$\alpha$ -pinene + O <sub>3</sub>	1.01 x 10 <sup>-15</sup> exp (-732/T)
$\alpha$ -pinene + NO <sub>3</sub>	$1.19 \text{ x } 10^{-12} \exp(490/\text{T})$
isoprene + OH	2.7 x 10 <sup>-11</sup> exp (390/T)
isoprene + O <sub>3</sub>	$1.0 \times 10^{-14} \exp(-1995/T)$
isoprene + NO <sub>3</sub>	$3.15 \times 10^{-12} \exp(-450/T)$

Table 2.4: BVOC reaction rates used in GLOMAP, taken from Atkinson et al. (1989) and Atkinson et al. (2006).

As discussed in *Chapter 1*, the atmospheric concentration of BVOCs in any location will depend upon the relative rates of production (emission) and loss (via oxidation, mixing of air masses and deposition). Figure 2.4 shows that GLOMAP represents well the seasonal cycle in monoterpene concentration observed by Hakola *et al.* (2012) and Lappalainen *et al.* (2009), at a boreal forest location (Hyytiälä, Finland; 24°17'E, 61°51'N).

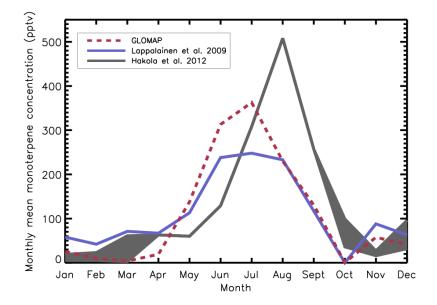


Figure 2.4: Seasonal cycle in monthly mean monoterpene concentration as simulated by GLOMAP-mode for the year 2000 (dashed red line) and observed in 2011 by Hakola *et al.* (2012; grey) and in 2006-7 by Lappalainen *et al.* (2009; blue) at Hyytiälä, Finland.

The standard version of GLOMAP-mode (Mann *et al.* 2010) includes only SOA from monoterpenes, in this work, a source of SOA from isoprene oxidation is added, following

Spracklen *et al.* (2011b). Monoterpenes generate secondary organic material at a 13% molar yield (after Tunved *et al.* 2004a; Spracklen *et al.* 2006), and isoprene at 3% (after Kroll *et al.* 2005, 2006). These yields are very uncertain and are varied in *Chapter 3* as part of a sensitivity study.

#### 2.1.3 Primary Particulate Emissions

Annual mean emissions of black carbon (BC) and particulate organic matter (POM) from fossil and biofuel combustion are taken from the analysis of Bond *et al.* (2004) and monthly wildfire emissions are from the Global Fire Emissions Database (GFEDv1) inventory (van der Werf *et al.* 2004), all represent the year 2000. Primary carbonaceous particles are emitted with the distribution characteristics described by Stier *et al.* (2005), i.e., number median diameter  $D_{\rm ff} = 60$  nm and  $D_{\rm bf} = 150$  nm; standard deviation  $\sigma_{\rm ff} = 1.59$ and  $\sigma_{\rm bf} = 1.59$  (where *ff* = fossil fuel and *bf* = biofuel/wildfire).

Following previous work by Stier *et al.* (2005) and the AeroCom recommendation (Dentener *et al.* 2006), 2.5% of all gas-phase SO<sub>2</sub> emissions are assumed to be emitted directly as particle phase sulphate to represent sub-grid scale particle formation. 50% of all sub-grid sulphate is emitted into the accumulation mode with a number mean diameter of 150 nm and  $\sigma$  of 1.59. For shipping, power plants and industrial sources, the remaining 50% is emitted with a number mean diameter of 1.5 µm and  $\sigma$  of 2.00 (i.e., into the coarse mode). For transport, domestic, wildfire and volcanic sources, the remaining 50% is emitted with a number mean diameter of 60 nm and  $\sigma$  of 1.59 (i.e., into the Aitken soluble mode).

The emission of primary sea-salt aerosol is parameterised using the sea-spray source function of Gong (2003). Bin-resolved emissions are generated (as in Spracklen *et al.* 2005a) and added to the accumulation (if  $D_g < 1 \ \mu m$ ) and coarse (if  $D_g > 1 \ \mu m$ ) modes.

#### 2.1.4 Microphysical Processes

#### 2.1.4.1 New Particle Formation

New particle formation, or nucleation, is known to occur throughout the atmosphere (Kulmala *et al.* 2004), from the free troposphere (e.g. Clarke *et al.* 1999) to the boundary layer (e.g. Clarke *et al.* 1998). Despite its ubiquity, understanding of the mechanisms driving formation of new particles in the atmosphere remains incomplete.

Several mechanisms have been proposed in order to explain atmospheric new particle formation, including binary homogeneous nucleation (BHN) of  $H_2SO_4$  and  $H_2O$  (Kulmala *et al.* 1998a; Vehkamäki *et al.* 2002), ternary nucleation of  $H_2SO_4$ - $H_2O$ - $NH_3$  (e.g. Ball *et al.* 1999; Napari *et al.* 2002; Merikanto *et al.* 2007), and ion-induced nucleation (e.g. Yu and Turco 2001; Lee *et al.* 2003; Lovejoy *et al.* 2004; Modgil *et al.* 2005).

BHN is included in GLOMAP-mode and parameterised according to the hydratecorrected, classical nucleation theory of Kulmala *et al.* (1998a); the nucleation rate,  $J_{BHN}$ , is calculated as in Eqn. 2.3:

$$J_{BHN} = \exp\left\{A \log\left(\frac{[H_2 SO_4]}{[H_2 SO_4]_{crit}}\right) + B x_{al} + C\right\}$$
(2.3)

Where  $[H_2SO_4]_{crit}$  is the gas phase concentration of  $H_2SO_4$  above which nucleation will occur and  $x_{al}$  is the  $H_2SO_4$  mole fraction in the critical nucleus. The coefficients *A*, *B* and *C* are temperature dependent and expressions for these are given in Kulmala *et al.* (1998a). These particles are assumed to be composed of 100 sulphuric acid molecules and are added to the nucleation mode.

BHN appears able to explain nucleation rates in the free troposphere, however, new particle formation has been observed to occur in the boundary layer at far higher rates

than would be predicted by BHN (Weber *et al.* 1996; Clarke *et al.* 1998; Spracklen *et al.* 2005a), ternary (Elleman and Covert 2009), or ion-induced nucleation (Lovejoy *et al.* 2004; Kirkby *et al.* 2011). Consequently, other mechanisms have been sought to explain new particle formation in the boundary layer.

Observed particle formation rates in the boundary layer appear to be proportional to the concentration of  $H_2SO_4$  to the power of either 1 or 2 (Weber *et al.* 1996; Kulmala *et al.* 2006; Sihto *et al.* 2006; Riipinen *et al.* 2007). In GLOMAP-mode, an empirically derived mechanism is used to represent the activation of  $H_2SO_4$  clusters, as proposed by Kulmala *et al.* (2006). With this approach, molecular clusters (1 nm in diameter) activate at a rate,  $J^*_{ACT}$ , calculated as in Eqn. 2.4:

$$J_{ACT}^* = A \left[ H_2 S O_4 \right]$$
(2.4)

The coefficient *A* represents the complexity of the activation process and may be a function of several parameters such as temperature and the concentration of other species; in this work an empirically determined value for *A* of  $2 \ge 10^{-6} \text{ s}^{-1}$  (Sihto *et al.* 2006) is used. In *Chapter 3*, several other parameterisations for the formation of the initial nucleating cluster are examined.

Following cluster activation, the production rate of particles of a measurable size,  $J_m$  is calculated using the approximation of Kerminen and Kulmala (2002), as given in Eqn. 2.5; where  $d_m$  represents the diameter of the measurable particle (taken here as 3 nm) and  $d^*$  represents the cluster diameter (in this case 1 nm but values for  $d^*$  vary):

$$J_m = J^* exp \left\{ 0.23 \left[ \frac{1}{d_m} - \frac{1}{d^*} \right] \frac{CS'}{GR} \right\}$$
(2.5)

This production rate accounts for scavenging by larger particles, and allows growth of nucleated clusters up to  $d_m$  at a constant rate, *GR*, proportional to the gas phase

concentration of  $H_2SO_4$ . The reduced condensation sink, *CS'*, is calculated as in Eqn. 2.6 by integrating over the aerosol size modes, *i*, following Kulmala *et al.* (2001b):

$$CS' = \sum_{i} \beta_i \, r_i N_i \tag{2.6}$$

Here,  $\beta_i$  is the translational correction factor for the condensational mass flux (Fuchs and Sutugin 1971),  $r_i$  is the particle radius and  $N_i$  is particle number concentration.

## 2.1.4.2 Coagulation

Both intra- and inter-modal coagulation (i.e., particle collision) are represented in GLOMAP-mode. Particles in the soluble modes can coagulate with particles in the larger soluble and insoluble modes, whereas insoluble mode particles can coagulate only with larger insoluble mode particles. A coagulation kernel, calculated as in Spracklen 2005) (equations for which are given in Section 2.2.6 of Mann *et al.* 2010), is used to determine the rate of change of particle number in each mode.

# 2.1.4.3 Condensation and Ageing

GLOMAP-mode includes the condensation of gas-phase  $H_2SO_4$  and (assumed lowvolatility) secondary organic material onto existing particles. Condensing  $H_2SO_4$  is added to the SU component, and condensing secondary organics are added the POM component. The rate of change of gas-phase molecular concentration of condensable material ( $S_{gas}$ ) is calculated as in Eqn. 2.7 where  $C_i$  is the condensation coefficient for each mode *i* (Eqn. 2.8).

$$\frac{\mathrm{d}S_{gas}}{\mathrm{d}t} = -\left(\sum_{i} C_{i} N_{i}\right) S_{gas} \tag{2.7}$$

$$C_i = 4 \pi D_s \overline{r_{i,cond}} F(Kn_i) A(Kn_i)$$
(2.8)

 $C_i$  is calculated following Fuchs and Sutugin (1971) from the diffusion coefficient for H<sub>2</sub>SO<sub>4</sub>, or a typical gas-phase  $\alpha$ -pinene oxidation product in air ( $D_s$ , calculated according to Fuller et al. (1966)) and the condensation sink radius ( $\overline{r_{l,cond}}$ , which is calculated as in Eqn. A1 of Mann *et al.* (2012), based on Lehtinen *et al.* (2003)).  $C_i$  is corrected for molecular effects and limitations in interfacial mass transport by the terms  $F(Kn_i)$  and  $A(Kn_i)$  respectively, calculated as in Eqns. 2.9 and 2.10:

$$F(Kn_i) = \frac{1 + Kn_i}{1 + 1.71Kn_i + 1.33(Kn_i)^2}$$
(2.9)

$$A(Kn_i) = \frac{1 + Kn_i}{1 + 1.33Kn_i F(Kn_i) \left(\frac{1}{s} - 1\right)}$$
(2.10)

Where *s* is the accommodation coefficient and  $Kn_i$  is the Knudsen number for each mode *i*, calculated in Eqn. 2.11 using the mean free path of the relevant condensable gas in air  $(MFP_{gas})$ .

$$Kn_i = \frac{MFP_{gas}}{\overline{r_{i,cond}}}$$
(2.11)

The approach described here means that gases condense according to particle surface area; the importance of the manner in which secondary organic material is added to the existing aerosol distribution is examined in *Chapter 5*.

Following the condensation of soluble gas-phase species, or coagulation with smaller soluble particles, previously insoluble particles may become water soluble. Once sufficient soluble material has been accumulated, in this case ten monolayers (as in Mann *et al.* 2010), particles are transferred to the corresponding hydrophilic mode. This process is also known as *physical ageing*; sensitivity to the amount of soluble material required for physical ageing is examined in *Chapter 3*.

## 2.1.4.4 Hygroscopic Growth

Water uptake by particles in each mode is calculated according to the Zadanovskii-Stokes-Robinson method (ZSR; Zadanovskii 1948; Stokes and Robinson 1966), using data from Table B.10 in Jacobson 2005 and assuming spherical particles. Organic material present in the non-hydrophilic Aitken mode is assumed to be non-hygroscopic; organic material present in any of the hydrophilic modes is either secondary or aged primary organic material and is therefore assigned a moderate hygroscopicity (65% of the assumed water uptake for sulphate). The geometric mean wet diameter for each mode,  $D_{wet,}$ , is calculated according to Eqn. 2.12:

$$D_{wet_i} = \left(\frac{6}{\pi \exp(4.5 \log^2 \sigma_{g,i})} \sum_j V_{wet_j}\right)^{\frac{1}{3}}$$
(2.12)

Where  $V_{wet_j}$  represents the partial volume for each component and its associated water, calculated as in Eqn. 2.13, where  $\rho_{X,j}$  is the density of the solution of component *j* with water (for soluble components, for insoluble component the original density is used).

$$V_{wet_j} = \frac{m_{ij}M_j}{N_a \,\rho_{X,j}} \tag{2.13}$$

# 2.1.4.5 Aerosol Activation and Cloud Processing

GLOMAP-mode simulates the activation of soluble particles (with dry radius greater than  $r_{act}$ ; here taken as 25 nm) to cloud droplets, and their subsequent growth (Mann *et al.* 2010; Mann *et al.* 2012). Particles in the Aitken soluble mode with dry radius greater than  $r_{act}$  are transferred to the accumulation mode and sulphate produced by in cloud aqueous-phase-oxidation of SO<sub>2</sub> is then partitioned between the soluble accumulation and coarse modes.

## 2.1.4.6 Dry Deposition

The removal of particles and gases from the atmosphere, in the absence of precipitation, is known as dry deposition. In GLOMAP-mode, dry deposition is represented using the parameterisation of Zhang *et al.* (2001), which follows the approach of Slinn (1982) in calculating a dry deposition velocity  $Vel_d$ , as in Eqn. 2.14:

$$Vel_d = Vel_{grav} + \frac{1}{R_a + R_s}$$
(2.14)

Where  $Vel_{grav}$  is the gravitational velocity; surface resistance  $R_s$  and aerodynamic resistance  $R_a$  are calculated by Eqns. 2.15 and 2.16 respectively, where k is the von Karman constant (equal to 0.4),  $u_*$  is the surface friction velocity, z is the height at which the dry deposition is being evaluated (the vertical distance from the surface), and  $z_0$  is the surface roughness length:

$$R_a = \frac{1}{ku_*} \ln\left(\frac{z}{z_0}\right) \tag{2.15}$$

$$R_s = \frac{1}{3u_*(E_b + E_{im} + E_{in})}$$
(2.16)

The collection efficiencies associated with Brownian diffusion, impaction and interception are represented by  $E_b$ ,  $E_{im}$  and  $E_{in}$  respectively, expressions for which are given in Mann *et al.* (2010). Experiments described in *Chapter 6* involve a change to the model land-surface type, which influences dry deposition through the terms  $z_0$ ,  $u_*$ ,  $E_b$ ,  $E_{im}$  and  $E_{in}$ .

#### 2.1.4.7 Wet Deposition: Nucleation and Impaction Scavenging

Nucleation scavenging occurs when precipitation is formed in a given model level. Large-scale (dynamic) precipitation removes particles at a rate of 99.99% conversion of cloud water to rain. The conversion rate for small-scale (convective) precipitation is calculated according to the parameterisation of Tiedtke (1989), with removal of aerosol assuming a raining fraction of 30%. In GLOMAP-mode, nucleation scavenging removes only soluble particles with a dry radius greater than  $r_{scav}$  (here taken as 103 nm).

Impaction scavenging represents the removal of aerosol by falling raindrops; its implementation in GLOMAP is discussed in detail by Pringle (2006). The Marshall-Palmer raindrop size distribution as modified by Sekhon and Srivastava (1971), and  $D_g$  for each mode, are used to determine raindrop-particle collection efficiencies from a look-up table. An empirical relationship is used to calculate the raindrop terminal velocity (Easter and Hales 1983).

## 2.1.5 Meteorological Conditions

Meteorological fields (wind, temperature and humidity) are obtained from European Centre for Medium-Range Weather Forecasts (ECMWF) analyses by interpolation of sixhourly reanalysis (ERA-40) fields. Cloud fraction and cloud top pressure fields are taken from the International Satellite Cloud Climatology Project (ISCCP) archive (<u>http://isccp.giss.nasa.gov/</u>; Rossow and Schiffer 1999) for the year 2000. Tracer transport is controlled using the Prather (1986) advection scheme, the convection scheme of Tiedtke (1989) and the scheme of Holtslag and Boville (1993) for boundary layer turbulence.

# 2.2 Calculation of Cloud Condensation Nuclei Concentrations

Only a subset of particles with sufficient hygroscopicity and size are able to act as cloud condensation nuclei (CCN). Following a simulation with GLOMAP-mode, CCN concentrations may be calculated offline using monthly-mean aerosol tracers, following the "κ-Köhler" approach of Petters and Kreidenweis (2007), an extension to Köhler theory.

Köhler theory (Köhler 1936) describes the competition between the Kelvin effect (i.e., the effect of particle curvature on the vapour pressure over the surface) and the solute effect, or Raoult's Law (i.e., the contribution of each chemical solute to the vapour pressure over the particle), to predict the CCN activity of a particle with given size and composition (e.g. Seinfeld and Pandis 2006c). Building on Köhler theory, Petters and Kreidenweis (2007) introduce the term  $\kappa$ , a quantitative measure of water uptake ability and CCN activity, also known as the *hygroscopicity parameter*.

In this work, a  $\kappa$  value is assigned to each component: SU (0.61, assuming ammonium sulphate), SS (1.28), BC (0.0) and POM (0.1), following Petters and Kreidenweis (2007). A multicomponent,  $\kappa_{multi}$ , is then obtained by weighting the individual  $\kappa$  values by the volume fraction of each component. Whilst there is considerable uncertainty associated with the hygroscopicity parameter for organic material in the atmosphere due to the wide range of solubilities observed,  $\kappa$  values close to 0.1 have been reported for secondary organic components (Engelhart *et al.* 2008; Gunthe *et al.* 2009; Dusek *et al.* 2010; King *et al.* 2010; Engelhart *et al.* 2011), and the entire organic fraction (Wang *et al.* 2008; Chang *et al.* 2010).

Here, CCN concentrations are calculated at a fixed uniform supersaturation of 0.2%. This would be equivalent to an activation dry diameter of approximately 80 nm (assuming a composition of pure ammonium sulphate).

# 2.3 Suitability of GLOMAP-mode for this work

As a two-moment scheme, GLOMAP is able to calculate aerosol number as well as mass. This confers considerable advantage over mass-only models when examining processes that affect the evolution of the aerosol size distribution. As demonstrated by Bellouin *et al.* (2013a), the addition of particle-phase material in a mass-only model results in an increase in aerosol number. However, if both mass and number are tracked, the addition of particle-phase material (for example the condensation of secondary organics) may grow existing particles; altering their size but not necessarily their number. Particle number concentrations will however be modified by changes to the condensation and coagulation sinks resulting from the particle growth; for example, enhanced condensation. Accounting for particle mass and number is particularly important if one wishes to determine the number of particles of a certain size, for example when calculating CCN concentrations.

# 2.4 Comparison to Observations

Particle and speciated mass concentrations simulated by GLOMAP-mode have been compared to observations in several previous studies (e.g. Mann *et al.* 2010; Woodhouse *et al.* 2010; Spracklen *et al.* 2011b; Mann *et al.* 2012; Schmidt *et al.* 2012) and in *Chapter 3* of this thesis.

Mann *et al.* (2010) found that GLOMAP-mode captures the spatial variability in observed POM mass concentrations over North America (Pearson's correlation coefficient, *R*, of 0.82); but that the POM mass burden was underestimated by the model (normalised mean bias, *NMB*, of -0.57). Spracklen *et al.* (2011b) found that GLOMAP-mode underestimated organic mass when compared against aerosol mass spectrometer observations at over 30 locations; the bias against observations was minimised when a large source of SOA (i.e. 100 Tg(SOA) a<sup>-1</sup>) was included in the model.

CCN concentrations calculated offline (Section 2.2) from both GLOMAP-mode and GLOMAP-bin have been compared to the global dataset of CCN observations compiled by Spracklen *et al.* (2011a). Spracklen *et al.* (2011a) and Schmidt *et al.* (2012) found that both versions of GLOMAP tend to underestimate CCN concentrations when compared to the global dataset (e.g. NMB = -38 %; Schmidt *et al.* 2012, NMB = -25%; Spracklen *et al.* 2011a). Spracklen *et al.* (2011a) demonstrated that simulated CCN concentrations were particularly sensitive to the treatment and atmospheric processing of primary particulate emissions, and the new particle formation mechanisms used; this will be explored in *Chapter 3.* 

# **Chapter 3: The Impact of Biogenic SOA on Particle and Cloud Condensation Nuclei Concentration**

## 3.1 Introduction

As described in *Chapter 1*, the presence of biogenic SOA affects the number and size of particles in the atmosphere. Organic oxidation products may condense onto existing particles and aid their growth to larger sizes (e.g., Riipinen *et al.* 2011), enhance particle solubility (Petters *et al.* 2006), and contribute to new particle formation (e.g., Metzger *et al.* 2010).

In this chapter, the role of biogenic secondary organic aerosol in the atmosphere is quantified using GLOMAP-mode. A set of experiments were conducted to determine the processes and parameters to which the impacts of biogenic SOA are most sensitive, and simulated particle concentrations were compared to a range of observations.

## **3.2 Experimental Design**

To examine the extent to which the simulated climate impacts of biogenic SOA are sensitive to uncertainties in aerosol processes, the series of model experiments described in Table 3.1 were completed. These simulations explore the impact of uncertainty in the SOA yield from BVOC oxidation, the role of organic oxidation products in new particle formation, and the interaction between SOA and primary carbonaceous aerosol emissions. All simulations are performed for the year 2000, with six months spin-up from zero initial aerosol (i.e., 18 months total simulation).

## 3.2.1 Yield

In the standard configuration (Expt. 2 to 4) monoterpenes and isoprene generate a condensable secondary organic material at fixed molar yields of 13% (following Tunved *et al.* 2004a; Spracklen 2005; Spracklen *et al.* 2006) and 3% (Kroll *et al.* 2005, 2006), respectively. These yields are very uncertain, so to account for this, experiments were conducted in which the SOA production yields were multiplied by a factor of 0.5, 2 and 5 (Expt. 5 to 7), resulting in a global production of between 18.5 Tg(SOA) a<sup>-1</sup> and 185.0 Tg(SOA) a<sup>-1</sup>. The global production of biogenic SOA from each experiment is detailed in Table 3.1 and all lie within the wide range of previous estimates (Section 1.2.4.5; Griffin *et al.* 1999; Kanakidou *et al.* 2005; Goldstein and Galbally 2007; Heald *et al.* 2010; Heald *et al.* 2011; Spracklen *et al.* 2011b).

Exp. No.	Expt. Name	Description	BVOCs included	Global production of SOA (Tg(SOA)a <sup>-1</sup> )
1	ACT		None	0
2	ACT_m	BHN with Eqn. 1 within the	Monoterpenes	20.4
3	ACT_i	boundary layer	Isoprene	16.6
4	ACT_mi		Mono + Iso	37.0
5	ACT_mi_x0.5	0.5 x SOA production yield	Mono + Iso	18.5
6	ACT_mi_x2	2 x SOA production yield	Mono + Iso	74.0
7	ACT_mi_x5	5 x SOA production yield	Mono + Iso	185.1
8	ACT_mi_noSOAage	No transfer of non- hydrophilic particles to the hydrophilic distribution via condensation of secondary organics	Mono + Iso	37.0
9	ACT_fast_age	One soluble monolayer required to transfer non-	None	0
10	ACT_mi_fast_age	hydrophilic particles to the hydrophilic distribution	Mono + Iso	37.0
11	ACT_BCOCsmall	Size distribution of primary BC and OC emissions set to	None	0
12	ACT_mi_BCOCsmall	AeroCom recommendation (Dentener <i>et al.</i> 2006).	Mono + Iso	37.0
13	BHN	Binary homogeneous	None	0
14	BHN_m	nucleation only	Monoterpenes	20.4
15	Org1	BHN with Eqn. 2 throughout	None	0
16	Org1_m	the atmosphere	Monoterpenes	20.4
17	Org2	BHN with Eqn. 3 throughout	None	0
18	Org2_m	the atmosphere	Monoterpenes	20.4
19	Org3	BHN with Eqn. 4 throughout	None	0
20	Org3_m	the atmosphere	Monoterpenes	20.4
21	ACT_1750	1750 emissions of BC, POM	None	0
22	ACT_1750_mi	and SO <sub>2</sub> taken from Dentener <i>et al.</i> 2006	Mono + Iso	37.0
23	ACT_1750_mi_x0.5	1750 emissions, with 0.5 x SOA production yield	Mono + Iso	18.5
24	ACT_1750_mi_x2	1750 emissions, with 2 x SOA production yield	Mono + Iso	74.0
25	ACT_1750_mi_x5	1750 emissions, with 5 x SOA production yield	Mono + Iso	185.1
26	Org1_1750	1750 emissions, standard yields and BHN with Eqn. 2	None	0
27	Org1_1750_m	throughout the atmosphere	Monoterpenes	20.4

Table 3.1: Summary of simulations performed; results from Expt. 21 to 27 are discussed in *Chapter 4*.

#### 3.2.2 New Particle Formation

New particle formation has been shown to strongly affect CCN concentrations (e.g., Spracklen *et al.* 2008b; Merikanto *et al.* 2009). To explore the potential role of BVOC oxidation products in the formation of new particles, the impact of biogenic SOA is quantified using five different representations of new particle formation (Table 3.1). All experiments include the binary homogeneous nucleation (BHN) of sulphuric acid and water (Kulmala *et al.* 1998a) which occurs mainly in the free troposphere (e.g., Spracklen *et al.* 2005b). However, as discussed in *Chapter 2*, observed particle formation rates in the boundary layer cannot be explained by binary nucleation of  $H_2SO_4$  and  $H_2O$  alone.

Here, BHN is combined with four parameterisations for the formation of new particles in the boundary layer (Table 3.2); ACT, Org1 and Org2 are taken from existing literature, whilst Org3 is evaluated for the first time here.

M	- h <sup>1</sup>	Cluster formation rate	Coefficient	Cluster	
Mechanism		$(J^*)$	values	size (nm)	
ACT	Kulmala <i>et al.</i> 2006	A [H <sub>2</sub> SO <sub>4</sub> ]	$A = 2 \ge 10^{-6} \text{ s}^{-1}$	0.8	(3.1)
Org1	Metzger <i>et al.</i> 2010	$k_1 [H_2SO_4][OxOrg]$	$k_I = 5 \ge 10^{-13} \text{ s}^{-1}$	1.5	(3.2)
Org2	Paasonen <i>et</i> <i>al.</i> 2010	$k_2 [H_2SO_4]^2 + k_3 [H_2SO_4][OxOrg]$	$k_2 = 1.1 \text{ x } 10^{-14} \text{ s}^{-1}$ $k_3 = 3.2 \text{ x } 10^{-14} \text{ s}^{-1}$	2.0	(3.3)
Org3	Riccobono et al. 2013	$k_4 [H_2SO_4]^2 [BioOxOrg]$	$k_4 = 5.5 \text{ x } 10^{-21} \text{ s}^{-1}$	1.7	(3.4)

Table 3.2: Summary of new particle formation mechanisms used during this chapter.

The first additional boundary layer mechanism (ACT; Eqn. 3.1) is described in *Chapter 2* and is based on the activation of  $H_2SO_4$  clusters, at a rate ( $J^*$ ) proportional to the gas phase concentration of  $H_2SO_4$ . This mechanism is restricted to the boundary layer and BHN is allowed to proceed at higher altitudes.

Sulphuric acid and organic compounds have both been implicated in the appearance of new particles at an observable size, but the identity of compounds initiating nucleation is inherently difficult to establish due to the practical limitations in measuring the composition of the smallest particles. In smog chamber experiments, Metzger *et al.* (2010) found that the formation rate of 1.5 nm clusters was proportional to the product of the gas-phase concentrations of  $H_2SO_4$  and low volatility products from the photo-oxidation of SOA precursor species, in this case 1,3,5-trimethylbenzene (Org1; Eqn. 3.2). Paasonen *et al.* (2010) found good correlation against a wide observational dataset when the particle formation rate combined a term based on the product of the square of  $H_2SO_4$  and an organic molecule, and a kinetic nucleation term proportional to the square of  $H_2SO_4$  concentration (Org2; Eqn. 3.3). In Eqns. 3.2 and 3.3, the term *OxOrg* represents the products of monoterpene oxidation only, since the role of isoprene oxidation products in new particle formation remains unclear (Kiendler-Scharr *et al.* 2009; Kanawade *et al.* 2011).

#### 3.2.2.1 The CLOUD Mechanism for New Particle Formation

The fourth additional mechanism (Org3; Eqn. 3.4) for new particle formation is the result of experiments performed in the CLOUD (Cosmics Leaving Outdoor Droplets) chamber at CERN. The CLOUD chamber is a stainless steel vessel of 26 m<sup>3</sup>, in which nucleation experiments may be conducted under stable and contaminant free conditions (Kirkby *et al.* 2011). A new parameterisation was developed to describe the dependence of nucleation rates on the concentration of  $H_2SO_4$  and organic oxidation products (*BioOxOrg*) in the chamber. *BioOxOrg* represents the oxidation products of pinanediol (*PD*,  $C_{10}H_{18}O_2$ ), chosen as a model compound for the first generation oxidation products of monoterpenes. The effects of  $H_2SO_4$  and *BioOxOrg* on the nucleation rate were determined experimentally by independently varying their concentrations in the CLOUD chamber; see the Supplementary Material of Riccobono *et al.* (2013) for further details on the experimental setup and protocol.

The formation rate of 1.7 nm clusters was found to be proportional to the concentration of  $H_2SO_4$  to the power 2, and the concentration of *BioOxOrg* to the power 1, with a multi-component pre-factor ( $k_4$ ; Table 3.2) of 5.5 x 10<sup>-21</sup> s<sup>-1</sup>. Figure 3.1 illustrates the possible combination of  $H_2SO_4$  and *BioOxOrg* molecules in the initial cluster, and their subsequent growth.

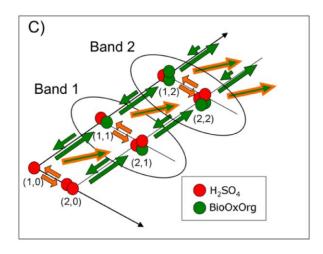


Figure 3.1: Simplified schematic of the possible pathways by which initiating clusters may form and grow; the clusters are grouped into bands according to the number of *BioOxOrg* molecules present. Arrows represent collision and evaporation rates for different molecules and clusters; orange arrows involve only a sulphuric acid molecule, green arrows involve only a *BioOxOrg* molecule and orange/green arrows represent a heteromer (1,1). Reproduced from Riccobono *et al.* 2013.

The concentration of *BioOxOrg* in the chamber, under steady state conditions, may be described as in Eqn. 3.5, in relation to its production (via oxidation of PD by OH) and loss rates (i.e., vapour loss to the chamber walls ( $k_{wall}$ ), condensation onto existing particles ( $k_{cond}$ ), and dilution due to replacement of sampled air in the chamber with clean air ( $k_{dil}$ )). The derivation of these loss terms is described in Riccobono *et al.* (2013). Here, it is sufficient to note that  $k_{wall}$  is the dominant loss rate.

$$[BioOxOrg] = \frac{k_{PD,OH}[PD][OH]}{(k_{wall} + k_{cond} + k_{dil})}$$
(3.5)

Similarly, the rate of change of PD concentration may be described as in Eqn. 3.6, in relation to its rate of production (via oxidation of  $\alpha$ -pinene) and loss (via oxidation to *BioOxOrg*).

$$\frac{d[PD]}{dt} = k_{\alpha pin, OH}[\alpha pin][OH] - k_{PD, OH}[PD][OH]$$
(3.6)

Therefore, at steady-state, when d[PD]/dt is zero, the concentration of PD may be expressed as in Eqn. 3.7:

$$[PD] = \frac{\left(k_{\alpha p i n, OH}[\alpha p i n]\right)}{k_{PD, OH}}$$
(3.7)

For implementation in GLOMAP-mode, Eqns. 3.4 to 3.7 were combined to give Eqn. 3.8, where  $k_{CS}$ , the atmospheric condensation sink (i.e., rate of condensation onto existing particles, s<sup>-1</sup>) replaces the loss term  $k_{wall}$ , and is calculated assuming the diffusion characteristics of a typical  $\alpha$ -pinene oxidation product (see Appendix A1 of Mann *et al.* 2012).

$$J^{*} = k_{4} \left[ H_{2} SO_{4} \right]^{2} \left[ \frac{(k_{\alpha p i n, OH} [\alpha p i n] [OH])}{k_{CS}} \right]$$
(3.8)

## 3.2.3 Characteristics of Primary Carbonaceous Emissions

In GLOMAP, the simulated aerosol size distributions and therefore CCN concentrations, are sensitive to the treatment of primary emissions (Reddington *et al.* 2011; Spracklen *et al.* 2011a), in particular the emission characteristics of primary carbonaceous aerosol. As described in *Chapter 2*, primary carbonaceous particles are emitted with the distribution characteristics described by Stier *et al.* (2005). Sensitivity to this choice, in terms of the impact of biogenic SOA, is explored with an additional set of simulations (*ACT\_BCOCsmall*) using the smaller emission size (i.e., number median diameter  $D_{\rm ff}$  =

30 nm,  $D_{bf} = 80$  nm; where  $ff = fossil fuel and bf = biofuel/wildfire respectively), but wider distribution (i.e., standard deviation <math>\sigma_{ff} = 1.8$ ,  $\sigma_{bf} = 1.8$ ) recommended by AeroCom (Dentener *et al.* 2006).

The process of physical ageing, by which non-hydrophilic particles become hydrophilic via condensation of soluble material, is poorly understood (Kanakidou *et al.* 2005). In GLOMAP, primary BC/OC particles are emitted into a non-hydrophilic distribution and are transferred to an internally mixed hydrophilic distribution after the condensation of a specific amount of condensable material. Here, the standard simulations assume that ten monolayers of condensable material (secondary organics or  $H_2SO_4$ ) are required to sufficiently coat an insoluble particle for it to become soluble. To examine the importance of this process, and its representation with respect to the impact of biogenic SOA, an additional simulation in which physical ageing does not occur as a result of the condensation of secondary organics (*ACT\_mi\_noSOAage*) is performed, and another in which only one soluble monolayer is required (*ACT\_mi\_fast\_age*).

## 3.2.4 Presence of Anthropogenic Emissions

To test the sensitivity of the impact of biogenic SOA to the presence of anthropogenic emissions, a set of simulations (Expts. 21 to 27) are conducted which include anthropogenic emissions from the year 1750 (BC and POM from wildfire and biofuel, SO<sub>2</sub> from wildfire and domestic sources), compiled for the AeroCom initiative (Dentener *et al.* 2006). In the 1750 emission dataset, wildfire emissions are scaled versions of monthly mean data from 1998-2002 (scaled according to population ratio (i.e., 1750 vs. 1990) from the Hundred Year database for Integrated Environmental Assessments (HYDE; <u>www.rivm.nl/hyde)</u>). Emissions from deforestation fires are scaled by population, whereas emissions from other land surfaces (grassland, shrub/bush, agricultural) are 60% scaled by population, as the remaining 40% is assumed to burn regardless of human activity; forest emissions in high latitudes (Europe, North America

and Russia) are doubled from current emissions to reflect the fact that there would have been less wildfire suppression in the past. Consequently, tropical deforestation emissions are lower in the 1750 dataset, but boreal wildfire emissions are higher (Dentener *et al.* 2006). Results from these simulations are discussed in *Chapter 4*.

## 3.3 Results

#### 3.3.1 Changes to Total Particle Concentration

Table 3.3 reports the impact of biogenic SOA on simulated aerosol properties. The impact of biogenic SOA on global annual mean total particle number concentration (greater than 3 nm dry diameter; N<sub>3</sub>) depends upon the nucleation mechanism implemented in the model. Whilst the condensation of secondary organic material leads to particle growth, this increase in particle size also enhances the condensation sink for nucleating gases (H<sub>2</sub>SO<sub>4</sub> and organic oxidation products) and the coagulational sink for newly formed particles. As a result, the global annual mean N<sub>3</sub> concentration is reduced by 7.9% when monoterpene emissions are included with activation boundary layer nucleation (*ACT\_m*) and by 0.4% when BHN is the only new particle formation mechanism (*BHN\_m*). In contrast, when organics contribute directly to nucleation (*Org1\_m*, *Org2\_m* and *Org3\_m*), a global annual mean increase in N<sub>3</sub> of between 22.0% and 142.0% is simulated. In these simulations, the additional nucleation resulting from the presence of organics outweighs the moderate reduction in N<sub>3</sub> due to the enhanced condensation sink.

Table 3.3: Global annual mean surface-level changes to  $N_3$  (number concentration of particles > 3 nm diameter) and CCN (0.2% supersaturation) concentration, relative to an equivalent control simulation including no BVOC emission. Each global annual mean change is expressed as a percentage, relative to the control simulation, in brackets.

Utackets.					
Exp. No.	Expt. Name	$\frac{\Delta N_3}{(cm^{-3})}$	$\frac{\Delta \text{CCN}}{(\text{cm}^{-3})}$		
2	ACT_m	-64.3 (-7.9%)	+23.5 (+10.4%)		
3	ACT_i	-43.1 (-5.3%)	+19.3 (+8.5%)		
4	ACT_mi	-79.6 (-9.7%)	+29.0 (+12.8%)		
5	ACT_mi_x0.5	-56.7 (-6.9%)	+22.1 (+9.7%)		
6	ACT_mi_x2	-106.7 (-13.0%)	+36.7 (+16.2%)		
7	ACT_mi_x5	-145.5 (-17.8%)	+48.0 (+21.1%)		
8	ACT_mi_noSOAage	-81.3 (-9.9%)	+8.3 (+3.6%)		
10	ACT_mi_fast_age	-81.5 (-9.9%)	+21.8 (+8.9%)		
12	ACT_mi_BCOCsmall	-55.8 (-5.0%)	+46.0 (+17.5%)		
14	BHN_m	-1.7 (-0.4%)	+20.3 (+10.4%)		
16	Org1_m	+643.0 (+142%)	+88.1 (+45.2%)		
18	Org2_m	+188.0 (+22.0%)	+39.0 (+15.5%)		
20	Org3_m	+302.3 (+66.7%)	+69.9 (+35.8)		

## 3.3.2 Changes to Cloud Condensation Nuclei Concentrations

In all the model configurations examined here, biogenic SOA increases the simulated global annual mean surface CCN concentration, with the relative enhancement ranging between 3.6% and 45.2% (Table 3.3). The spatial distribution of changes to CCN concentration (Figure 3.2) does not simply match the distribution of BVOC emissions (Figure 2.3) due to the diverse range of processes controlling the aerosol size distribution and CCN number. For the ACT simulation shown in Figure 3.2, biogenic SOA (from monoterpenes and isoprene) increases annual mean CCN concentrations by up to 100%

over the Amazon, whilst reducing annual mean CCN concentrations by up to 10% over some tropical oceans.

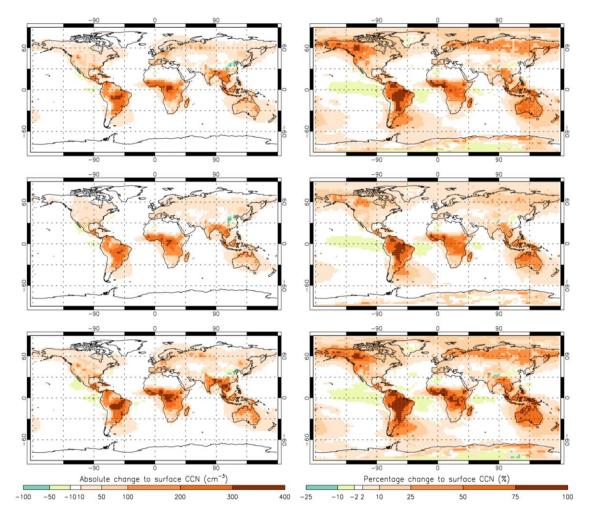


Figure 3.2: Simulated annual mean absolute (left) and percentage (right) changes to surface level cloud condensation nuclei (CCN) number concentration, calculated at 0.2% supersaturation, resulting from the emission of monoterpenes (*ACT\_m*; upper), isoprene (*ACT\_i*; middle) and both monoterpenes and isoprene (*ACT\_m*; lower).

The largest increases in absolute CCN concentration are simulated in regions coincident with substantial primary particle emissions (particularly regions of tropical biomass burning) suggesting an important interaction between SOA and primary particles. In GLOMAP, primary carbonaceous aerosol from fossil fuel combustion and wildfire is initially non-hydrophilic, being emitted into the Aitken insoluble mode. Condensation of soluble gas phase species moves these particles into the hydrophilic Aitken mode, where they are able to act as CCN. Without this physical ageing by SOA, the global annual mean increase in CCN concentration is reduced to 3.6% ( $ACT_mi_noSOAage$ ), compared to 12.8% in the equivalent standard run ( $ACT_mi$ ). When the physical ageing requires only one monolayer of soluble material ( $ACT_mi_fast_age$ ), the global mean increase in CCN number concentration is reduced to 8.9% because carbonaceous particles are more efficiently coated and transferred to the hydrophilic distribution by H<sub>2</sub>SO<sub>4</sub>, such that CCN concentrations are less sensitive to the presence of organics. Using a smaller emission size for primary carbonaceous aerosol ( $ACT_mi_BCOCsmall$ ) increases the global annual mean change to surface CCN concentrations when biogenic SOA is included to 17.5%. A smaller emission size increases the number of primary particles emitted per mass of carbonaceous material, thereby providing more non-hydrophilic particles ready to be aged to the hydrophilic modes where they are able to act as CCN. Additionally, the lower surface area of these smaller particles allows a faster rate of ageing by a given amount of SOA.

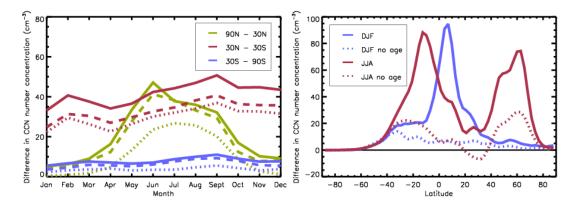


Figure 3.3: Left: Monthly mean absolute change in surface CCN number concentration (cm<sup>-3</sup>) at 0.2% supersaturation, across three latitude bands, when monoterpene (*ACT\_m*; dashed lines), isoprene (*ACT\_i*; dotted lines) and both monoterpene and isoprene (*ACT\_mi*; solid lines) emissions are included. **Right:** Seasonal mean absolute change in CCN number concentration (cm<sup>-3</sup>) at 0.2% supersaturation during Dec-Feb (blue) and Jun-Aug (red) using the ACT mechanism; solid lines represent *ACT\_mi* and dotted lines *ACT\_mi\_noSOAage* (i.e. condensable organics do not transfer non-hydrophilic particles to the hydrophilic distribution).

At tropical latitudes (30°N to 30°S), high year-round emissions of both isoprene and monoterpenes (Section 2.1.2.2) result in large increases to CCN concentrations (Figure 3.2) throughout the seasonal cycle (red lines in Figure 3.3, *left*). Between 30°N and 90°N, increases in CCN are largest during the NH summer, with small increases simulated in

winter months when emissions of BVOC are low. Over the high latitude boreal forests, monoterpene emissions are responsible for the majority of the CCN increase (green lines in Figure 3.3, *left*), owing to their higher emission rate as compared to isoprene (Section 2.1.2.2). In the southern hemisphere (30°S to 90°S), absolute CCN changes are small throughout the year due to low BVOC emissions at these latitudes (blue lines in Figure 3.3, *left*). However, relatively low absolute changes can result in substantial fractional changes, particularly over ocean regions (Figure 3.2, *right*) due to low background CCN number concentration.

Within 30° either side of the equator, BVOC emissions in the GEIA inventory (Guenther *et al.* 1995) are slightly higher during the respective wet seasons (April - September in northern tropics; October - March in southern tropics), but as shown in Figure 3.3 (*right*), the largest absolute increase in CCN concentration occurs during the dry seasons when primary carbonaceous emissions from wildfires are highest. The importance of ageing is confirmed by much lower CCN increase simulated when secondary organic material does not transfer non-hydrophilic particles to the hydrophilic distribution (dotted lines in Figure 3.3, *right*). At high northern latitudes, the process of physical ageing also contributes to the summertime CCN increase (Figure 3.3, *right*), but a more substantial contribution here comes from the growth of smaller particles to CCN active sizes via condensation of organic material.

Over some ocean regions, BVOC emissions can cause reductions in simulated CCN concentrations (Figure 3.2), as a result of several different processes. The presence of biogenic SOA allows non-hydrophilic particles to be aged (i.e., transferred to a hydrophilic mode) and enhances their growth up to the size at which they may be nucleation scavenged (Section 2.1.4.7). In the absence of SOA, simulated particle growth may only proceed via coagulation and condensation of sulphuric acid. Therefore, in the presence of SOA, particles grow more quickly to a size where they may be removed from the atmosphere by nucleation scavenging. Additionally, the presence of biogenic SOA

enhances condensation sink over continental regions, resulting in increased condensation of the  $H_2SO_4$  onto existing particles. This can lower  $H_2SO_4$  concentrations in the upper troposphere, subsequently reducing binary homogeneous nucleation and the number of particles entrained into the boundary layer. This entrainment of particles formed in the upper troposphere makes the largest contribution to surface CCN concentrations over the sub-tropical oceans (Merikanto *et al.* 2009). Where these processes outweigh the generation of new CCN via particle growth, and ageing of primary particles, a net reduction in CCN concentration is simulated.

Monoterpene emissions contribute a greater increase to global annual mean CCN concentration, than isoprene emissions ( $ACT_m$  and  $ACT_i$ ; Table 3.3). This occurs partly because a greater amount of SOA is generated from their oxidation, despite total annual monoterpene emissions in the GEIA inventory being a factor of four lower than those for isoprene, but may also be due to the spatial distribution of emissions and relative proximity to sources of fine particles that require growth to reach CCN sizes (e.g., carbonaceous particles from fossil fuel combustion). As indicated in Figure 3.2 and Figure 3.3 (*left*), the contributions from each BVOC are not additive; monoterpene and isoprene SOA increase CCN concentrations by approximately 10.4% and 8.5% respectively whereas the combined emission results in only 12.8% increase. This suggests a saturation of the global CCN response to the presence of SOA and is confirmed by the reduced sensitivity to yield increase observed for Experiments 4 to 7.

## 3.3.3 Sensitivity to New Particle Formation

The simulated contribution of SOA to global mean CCN concentrations depends strongly on the nucleation mechanism used in the model. Inclusion of an empirically derived particle activation mechanism within the boundary layer (i.e., ACT, Eqn. (3.1) results in a greater absolute global annual change in CCN concentration due to monoterpene SOA (+23.5 cm<sup>-3</sup>;  $ACT_m$ ), when compared to the equivalent simulation using only BHN (+20.3 cm<sup>-3</sup>; *BHN\_m*). This occurs because particles formed by the activation of H<sub>2</sub>SO<sub>4</sub> clusters in the boundary layer are able to grow to CCN active sizes by the condensation of organic oxidation products and is particularly evident between 40 and 60°N (Figure 3.4, *left*) where there is a strong contribution to total particle numbers from nucleation within the boundary layer (Merikanto *et al.* 2009). However, a similar annual global mean fractional CCN change (+10.4%) due to monoterpene SOA is simulated in each case, owing to the higher background CCN concentration when the ACT mechanism is used.

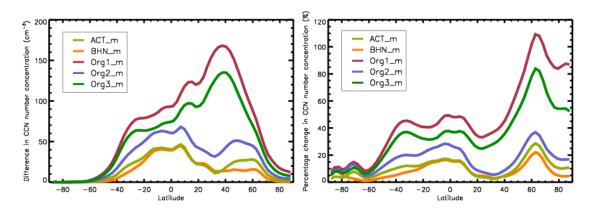


Figure 3.4: Annual mean absolute (left) and percentage (right) change in surface CCN number concentration, at 0.2% supersaturation, when monoterpene emissions are included in the model, using four particle formation mechanisms: ACT (light green), BHN only (orange), Org1 (red), Org2 (blue) and Org3 (dark green).

When monoterpene oxidation products are allowed to participate directly in nucleation  $(Org1_m, Org2_m \text{ and } Org3_m)$ , the contribution of biogenic SOA to CCN concentrations is substantially greater; increasing the global annual mean by 15.5% for Org2, 35.8% for Org3 and 45.2% for Org1. The large increase in CCN concentrations when the Org1 and Org3 mechanisms are used can be attributed to the fact that in the absence of BVOC emissions, new particle formation in the boundary layer does not occur. With these mechanisms, the peak annual mean absolute increase in CCN increases simulated over south east U.S.A, Europe and China, regions of high monoterpene emission during the Northern Hemisphere summer. Substantial fractional increases (over 80%) are simulated in regions where high monoterpene emissions combine with low

background aerosol number concentrations such as the boreal regions of northern Russia and Canada (Figure 3.4, *right* and Figure 3.5, *right*).

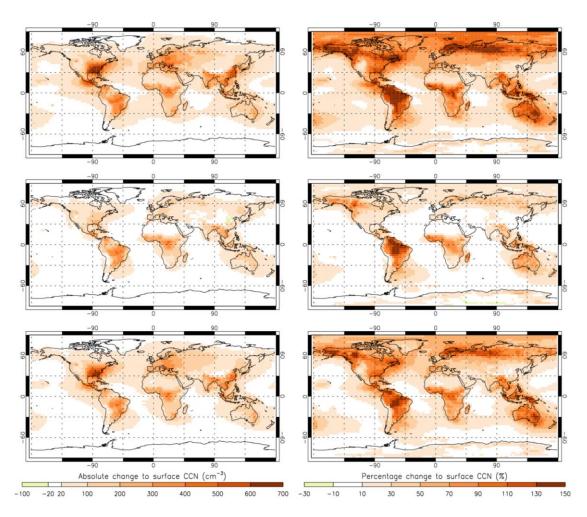


Figure 3.5: Simulated annual mean absolute (left) and percentage (right) changes to surface level cloud condensation nuclei (CCN) number concentration, calculated at 0.2% supersaturation, when monoterpene emissions are included in the model, for the *Org1\_m* (upper), *Org2\_m* (middle) and *Org3\_m* (lower) experiments. Note that scale differs from Figure 3.2.

## **3.4** Comparison to Observations

#### **3.4.1** Seasonal Cycle at Forested Sites

The simulated seasonal cycle in the number concentration of particles with dry diameter greater than 80 nm ( $N_{80}$ ) was compared against multi-annual monthly mean observations at three forested sites: Hyytiälä, Finland (e.g. Kulmala *et al.* 1998b; 2001a) from 1996-2006, Pallas, Finland (e.g. Hatakka *et al.* 2003; Komppula *et al.* 2003) from 2000-2011, and Aspvreten, Sweden (e.g. Tunved *et al.* 2004b) from 2005-2007. These locations were chosen since they are relatively remote from anthropogenic aerosol sources and are in regions with substantial BVOC emissions.  $N_{80}$  concentrations were evaluated since these match particles of CCN relevant size; although  $N_{80}$  does not take into account the composition or solubility of the particles, long-term observations of CCN are not yet available at locations suitable for this study. Observations were taken from the EBAS database (available at <u>http://ebas.nilu.no</u>) and monthly mean model values are linearly interpolated to each location.

Table 3.4 gives the Pearson correlation coefficient (*R*) between simulated and observed monthly mean  $N_{80}$  concentrations at each site; possible values of R span from -1 (perfect anti-correlation) to +1 (perfect correlation). Figure 3.6 shows the observed and simulated seasonal cycle at Hyytiälä and Pallas; a pronounced seasonal cycle in  $N_{80}$  is observed at these locations, with summertime (JJA) concentrations a factor of two greater than those measured in the wintertime (DJF). Without biogenic SOA, summertime  $N_{80}$ concentrations are under-predicted (dotted line in Figure 3.6) and simulations do not capture the seasonal cycle; the maximum correlation coefficient at Hyytiälä is 0.37, 0.16 at Aspvreten, and 0.14 at Pallas (all obtained using the Org2 mechanism). The inclusion of biogenic SOA improves the correlation between simulated and observed values for each set of simulations at all three locations, primarily by increasing summertime  $N_{80}$ concentrations.

	Pearson co	prrelation coefficier	$\mathbf{t}(R)$	
	<b>Pearson correlation coefficient</b> ( <i>R</i> )			NMB
	Hyytiälä, Finland	Aspvreten,	Pallas, Finland	(%)
	Boreal forest, influenced	Sweden	Very remote	(%) against
Simulation	by European pollution;	Boreal forest	location at	subset of
	typical background for	location, mid-	northern border of	CCN
	high latitude Europe	Sweden	boreal zone	dataset
	[24.3°E, 61.9°N]	[17.4°E, 58.8°N]	[24.1°E, 68.0°N]	uataset
ACT	0.31	0.13	0.13	-44.4
ACT_mi	0.44	0.22	0.40	-16.0
ACT_mi_x0.5	0.42	0.22	0.36	-16.4
ACT_mi_x2	0.41	0.19	0.35	-16.7
ACT_mi_x5	0.26	0.06	0.15	-17.2
ACT_mi_noSOAage	0.44	0.21	0.42	-40.5
ACT_mi_fast_age	0.44	0.19	0.40	-16.5
ACT_mi_BCOCsmall	0.50	0.33	0.35	+48.2
BHN	0.09	-0.15	-0.04	-48.7
BHN_m	-0.01	-0.18	-0.22	-22.9
Org1	0.09	-0.15	-0.04	-48.6
Org1_m	0.61	0.46	0.60	+16.9
Org2	0.37	0.16	0.14	-26.6
Org2_m	0.60	0.43	0.57	+20.8
Org3	0.09	-0.15	-0.04	-48.6
Org3_m	0.64	0.48	0.63	+0.3

Table 3.4: Pearson correlation coefficient (*R*) between multi-annual monthly mean observed and simulated monthly mean  $N_{80}$  concentrations. The normalised mean bias (NMB; Eqn.3.10) in surface CCN concentration between model and observations is also given for each simulation.

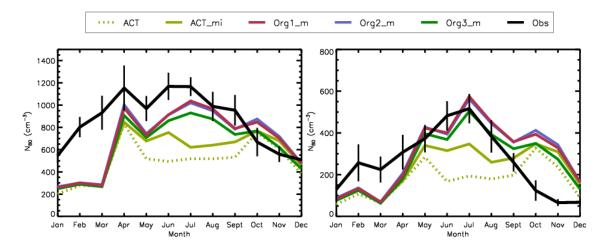


Figure 3.6: Multi-annual monthly mean observed (black lines) seasonal cycle in  $N_{80}$  concentration at Hyytiälä (left) and Pallas (right); standard deviation of the observed monthly mean is indicated by the vertical black lines.  $N_{80}$  concentrations simulated using the ACT (light green; Expt.1 and Expt. 4) and Org1 (red), Org2 (blue) and Org3 (dark green) nucleation mechanisms.

When the ACT mechanism is used, increasing the yield of SOA production ( $ACT_mi_x2$  and  $ACT_mi_x5$ ) reduces the correlation coefficient at all three sites, when compared to the standard yield simulation ( $ACT_mi$ ). This occurs because, at Hyytiälä for example, summer time N<sub>80</sub> concentrations simulated with the higher yields are lower than simulated with the standard yield. As indicated in Figure 3.7, increasing the SOA formation yield increases the size of the largest particles (> 400 nm), enhancing the simulated condensation sink for potential nucleating gases and the coagulational sink for nucleation mode particles, suppressing new particle formation and growth as a route to 80 nm particles.

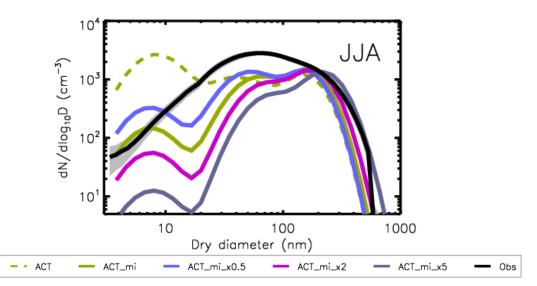


Figure 3.7: Simulated and measured (multi-annual; 1996-2006) seasonal (June-July-August) mean number size distribution at Hyytiälä, Finland. Simulations include both monoterpene and isoprene emissions (except *ACT*; green dashed line), with SOA yields varied by a factor of 10.

The seasonal cycle is captured best when monoterpene oxidation products are included in the particle formation rate (red, blue and dark green lines in Figure 3.6), with the Org3 mechanism giving the best correlation at all three locations (0.64 at Hyytiälä, 0.48 at Aspvreten and 0.63 at Pallas). Figure 3.8 indicates that organically-mediated nucleation is required to simulate sufficient particle concentrations between 20 - 100 nm; however, the number of particles in the nucleation mode is over-predicted.

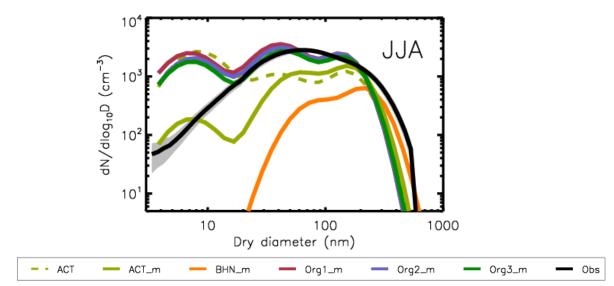


Figure 3.8: Simulated and measured (multi-annual; 1996-2006) seasonal (June-July-August) mean number size distribution at Hyytiälä, Finland. Simulations include different representations of new particle formation.

## 3.4.2 Seasonal Cycle in Total Particle Concentration

The simulated seasonal cycle in total particle number concentration was compared to the multi-annual observational dataset compiled by Spracklen *et al.* (2010). Here, data collected from 19 northern hemisphere continental boundary layer locations (Table 3.5) is used. The definition of the particle number concentration varies between sites (e.g.,  $N_3$ ,  $N_7$  ...) due to differences in instrumentation, and the associated minimum cut-off diameter.

	•	barison; taken from Spracklen <i>e</i>	Minimum cut-off
Locatio	)n	<b>Observation Period</b>	diameter (nm)
Hyytiälä	24.3°E, 61.9°N	2000-2004	3
Pallas	24.1°E, 68.0°N	2000-2004, 2007	10
Finokalia	25.7°E, 35.3°N	1997, 2006-2007	10
Hohenpeissenberg	11.0°E, 47.8°N	2006-2007	3
Melpitz	12.3°E, 51.2°N	1996-1997, 2003	3
Bondville	88.4°W, 40.1°N	1994-2007	14
Southern Great Plains	97.5°W, 36.6°N	1996-2007	10
Tomsk	85.1°E, 56.5°N	2005-2006	3
Listvyanka	104.9°E, 51.9°N	2005-2006	3
Harwell	359.0°E, 51.0°N	2000	10
Weybourne	1.1°E, 53.0°N	2005	10
India Himilaya	79.6°E, 29.4°N	2005-2008	10
Aspvreten	17.4°E, 58.8°N	2000-2006	10
Utö	21.4°E, 59.8°N	2003-2006	7
Värriö	29.6°E, 67.8°N	1998-2006	8
Thompson Farm	289.1°E, 43.1°N	2001-2009	7
Castle Springs	71.3°W, 43.7°N	2001-2008	7
Tannus Observatory	8.4°E, 50.2°N	2008-2009	10
Po Valley	11.6°E, 44.7°N	2002-2006	3

Table 3.5: Observation sites used in comparison; taken from Spracklen et al. (2010).

A normalised anomaly  $(A_x)$  for observed monthly mean particle number concentrations  $(N_x)$ , relative to the annual mean particle number concentration  $(M_x)$ , was calculated at each site, as in Eqn. 3.9:

$$A_{\chi} = \frac{(N_{\chi} - M_{\chi})}{M_{\chi}}$$
(3.9)

The same approach was applied to the model output from five simulations (*ACT\_m*, *BHN\_m*, *Org1\_m*, *Org2\_m* and *Org3\_m*); model data were interpolated to the observation location in the horizontal, and in the vertical where necessary. Figure 3.9 compares the observed mean (across the 19 locations) normalised anomaly for each month, to those simulated by the model using five different schemes for new particle formation. Using the ACT particle formation mechanism gives peak particle number concentration during the early spring, with summertime nucleation suppressed by the higher condensation sink. Inclusion of an organically mediated new particle formation mechanism greatly improves the representation of the observed seasonal cycle.

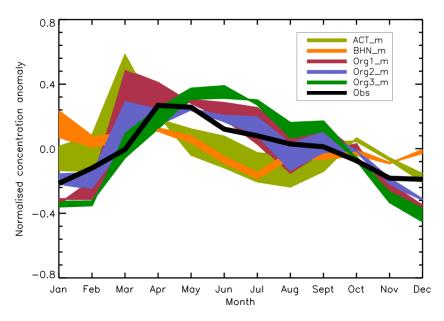


Figure 3.9: Normalised concentration anomaly in simulated and observed monthly mean total particle concentration across 19 northern hemisphere continental boundary layer locations (Spracklen *et al.* 2010). Multiannual observations, represented by the black line, are derived from measurements with various minimum cut-off diameters (Table 3.5); the coloured shading represents the region between the modelled normalised concentration anomaly at 3 nm and 14 nm. A variation of this figure appears in Riccobono *et al.* (2013).

Table 3.6 reports the mean R value, across the 19 locations, between measured and simulated particle concentrations; model values were sampled at the relevant particle size for each location, e.g., to compare against observations at Hyytiälä,  $N_3$  was used, but to compare against observations at Pallas,  $N_{10}$  was used. Inclusion of an organically mediated new particle formation rate increases R from 0.23 ( $ACT_m$ ; where new particle formation is based on activation of sulphuric acid clusters), up to 0.40 for  $Org3_m$ .

Simulation	Pearson Correlation Coefficient (R)
ACT_m	0.23
BHN_m	0.08
Org1_m	0.37
Org2_m	0.33
Org3_m	0.40

Table 3.6: Mean Pearson correlation coefficient between multi-annual observed and simulated monthly mean total particle concentration, across 19 continental boundary layer locations.

#### 3.4.3 Cloud Condensation Nuclei Concentrations

Simulated CCN concentrations were compared to a subset of the CCN dataset compiled by Spracklen *et al.* (2011a). The treatment of primary carbonaceous emissions has been shown to strongly influence particle number concentrations and aerosol size distributions simulated by global aerosol microphysics models (Reddington *et al.* 2011; Spracklen *et al.* 2011a). Therefore, simulated CCN were compared against measurements filtered to minimise the influence of these particles: that is, data for terrestrial locations with a simulated present day / pre-industrial CCN concentration ratio (calculated from  $[CCN]_{ACT_{mi}}/[CCN]_{ACT_{1750_{mi}}}$ ) less than 2, during times when the site was reported to be unaffected by wildfire emissions. This subset of data contained 25 observations (each representing time-weighted mean CCN concentration from a sampling period of days to weeks) from the 6 locations detailed in Table 3.7. Relative uncertainties in the observational dataset all lie in the range ±5-40%, but most within ±10-20% (Spracklen *et*  *al.* 2011a). CCN concentrations from the model were calculated for each of the six locations using the supersaturation at which the observations were recorded.

Table 3.7: Locations included in t		
Locati	Reference	
Balbina, Amazon Basin	59.4°W, 1.9°S	Roberts et al. 2001
Rondonia, Amazon Basin	61.9°W, 10.9°S	Williams et al. 2002
Amazon Basin	73°W, 5°S and 63°W, 12°S	Andreae et al. 2004
Fazenda Nossa, Amazon Basin	62.35°W, 10.8°S	Vestin <i>et al.</i> 2007
Reno, USA	119.8°W, 39.5°N	Hudson and Frisbie 1991
Lauder, New Zealand	169.7°E, 45°S	Delene and Deshler 2001

Table 3.4 reports the normalised mean bias (NMB) between observed and simulated CCN, calculated according to Eqn. 3.10 where  $S_x$  are CCN number concentrations simulated by the model, and  $O_x$  are observed CCN number concentrations at each location, *x*.

$$NMB = 100\% \times \sum (S_x - O_x) \div \sum O_x$$
 (3.10)

In the absence of biogenic SOA, CCN concentrations are under-predicted (NMB between -48.6% and -26.6%). Inclusion of biogenic SOA reduces the NMB at these locations to within the uncertainty associated with the observational dataset, e.g., from -44.4% to - 16.0% for  $ACT_mi$ .

Whilst the mechanisms Org1 and Org2 led to an over prediction in CCN concentration (NMB = +16.9% for Org1 and +20.0% for Org2; still within the uncertainty of the measurements), the Org3 mechanism gives very good agreement (NMB = 0.3%) across this subset of locations. In the Org3 mechanism,*BioOxOrg*is generated only from monoterpene oxidation via OH, rather than the*OxOrg*term in Org1 and Org2 which is

generated from monoterpene oxidation by OH,  $O_3$  and  $NO_3$ . This difference in oxidation pathway could introduce spatial, seasonal and diurnal differences to the nucleation rate and warrants further investigation.

When biogenic SOA is included, but is not able to age non-hydrophilic particles to the hydrophilic distribution ( $ACT_mi_noSOAage$ ), CCN concentrations are under-predicted (NMB = -40.5%) suggesting that despite selecting for relatively pristine locations and times, the ageing of carbonaceous particles still contributes substantially to local CCN concentrations. The faster rate of ageing ( $ACT_mi_fast_age$ ) makes little difference to the correlation (NMB = -16.5%, as compared to -16.0% for the standard ageing), suggesting that the process of generating CCN-active particles through physical ageing is not being limited by the availability of condensable material in these locations. This is confirmed by the narrow range of NMB values obtained (-16.0% to -17.2%) when yield of SOA production is varied by a factor of 10. When the smaller emission size for BC/OC primary particles is used ( $ACT_mi_BCOCsmall$ ), CCN concentrations are substantially over-predicted (NMB = + 48.2%), suggesting that this emission size generates too many CCN active particles in the presence of SOA.

## 3.5 Summary and Conclusions

In all simulations, the inclusion of biogenic SOA increases the global annual mean CCN concentration (by between 3.6% and 45.2%). In the absence of organic-mediated nucleation, most of the simulated increase in CCN number concentration occurs due to physical ageing, and subsequent growth, of non-hydrophilic particles originating from wildfire and carbonaceous combustion. However, when monoterpene oxidation products affect the new particle formation rate, CCN concentrations are mostly perturbed by the growth of newly formed particles to CCN-active sizes. Similarly, at around 60°N, where monoterpene emissions are high during the northern hemisphere summer months and

background particle concentrations are low, a greater proportion of the CCN increase is associated with the growth of smaller particles.

In the absence of organically-mediated new particle formation, regional decreases in CCN concentrations are simulated, due to both enhanced nucleation scavenging of non-hydrophilic particles, and the suppression of both upper tropospheric and boundary layer nucleation.

The low sensitivity of CCN to the inclusion of biogenic SOA in experiments without organic-mediated nucleation is consistent with the much larger parameter sensitivity study of Lee *et al.* (2013). Using an emulator approach, they varied biogenic SOA production between 5 and 360 Tg(SOA)  $a^{-1}$ , resulting in a global mean 3% standard deviation in CCN concentration.

Simulated particle concentrations were compared to observations from a range of locations. In the absence of SOA, GLOMAP-mode fails to capture the summertime peak in N<sub>80</sub> concentrations at boreal forest locations (e.g., *R* of 0.31 for *ACT* at Hyytiala), with the best representation found when organic oxidation products contribute directly to new particle formation (e.g., *R* of 0.64 for  $Org3_m$  at Hyytiälä). Similarly, the seasonal cycle in total particle concentration at sites across the continental boundary layer is better captured when organically-mediated new particle formation is included (*R* of 0.40 for  $Org3_m$  as compared to 0.23 for  $ACT_m$ ).

Results in this chapter suggest that organic compounds do contribute to the initial stages of atmospheric new particle formation, and therefore, that CCN sensitivity to the presence of biogenic SOA is high.

## Chapter 4: The Radiative Impact of Biogenic SOA

## 4.1 Introduction

Despite the ubiquity of organic material in the particle phase over much of the world (e.g., Zhang *et al.* 2007; Jimenez *et al.* 2009), its impact on the climate is not well understood (Mahowald *et al.* 2011).

In *Chapter 3*, the presence of biogenic SOA was shown to alter the number and size of particles in the atmosphere; specifically increasing the global annual mean concentration of CCN-sized particles. In this chapter, the direct and first aerosol indirect radiative effects resulting from these changes to the aerosol distribution are quantified using the Edwards-Slingo radiative transfer model.

The top-of-atmosphere (TOA) change in radiative flux due to the presence of biogenic SOA is referred to in this thesis as its radiative effect (RE), after Rap *et al.* (2013). Also calculated in this chapter is the change in TOA radiative balance relative to pre-industrial conditions, termed the radiative forcing (RF), after Forster *et al.* (2007) and Ramaswamy *et al.* (2001).

## 4.2 Experimental Setup

## 4.2.1 The Edwards-Slingo Radiative Transfer Model

The radiative transfer model of Edwards and Slingo (1996) (hereafter E-S) calculates radiative fluxes, or radiances, given a particular atmospheric state. The E-S model was originally designed to operate within the Hadley Centre Global Environmental Model (HadGEM) but is used here in an offline configuration, with a horizontal resolution of  $2.5^{\circ}$  x  $2.5^{\circ}$  and 23 fixed vertical levels (from the surface to 1 hPa). To avoid the computational expense involved in modelling all atmospheric absorption lines, the spectrum of radiation is split into six bands in the shortwave (SW) region, and nine bands in the longwave (LW) region, with each band modelled as a downward and upward flux.

In the offline configuration, multi-annual mean (1990-2000) monthly climatologies for gas-phase species (e.g., water vapour,  $O_3$ ,  $CO_2$ ,  $CH_4$ ) and temperature are used, based on ECMWF reanalysis data. Cloud fields (liquid water path and cloud fraction) are taken from the ISCCP-D2 archive (Rossow and Schiffer 1999) for the year 2000. Sensitivity of the direct and first indirect radiative effects to the particular cloud climatology used (i.e., single year versus multi-annual mean) was examined in Rap *et al.* (2013) and found be to be very low, for a range of natural aerosol sources including monoterpene derived SOA.

## 4.2.2 Direct Radiative Effect

To determine the direct radiative effect (DRE), the radiative transfer model was used to calculate the difference in net TOA all-sky (i.e., including clouds) radiative flux (SW + LW) between experiments including SOA and the equivalent experiments without SOA.

The offline E-S model was adapted to include a new offline version of the UKCA\_RADAER code, previously configured for use with the CLASSIC (Coupled

Large-scale Aerosol Simulator for Studies In Climate) aerosol scheme (e.g., Bellouin *et al.* 2011). However, because the mean radius of, chemical composition, and amount of water associated with each aerosol mode varies during simulations with GLOMAP-mode, the aerosol optical properties cannot be pre-computed, as was the case with previous implementations of UKCA\_RADAER (Bellouin *et al.* 2011; Bellouin *et al.* 2013a). Accordingly, the modal refractive index is calculated as the volume-weighted average refractive index of the individual components (given in Table A1 of Bellouin *et al.* 2011) in the mode, including water. As described by Bellouin *et al.* (2013a), optical properties are obtained from a look-up table of all possible combinations of refractive index and Mie parameter (relationship between the modal radius and the wavelength of radiation) for computational efficiency.

In the GLOMAP experiments described in *Chapter 3*, secondary organic material is added to the POM component. When coupling to UKCA\_RADAER, the optical properties of POM are calculated assuming the characteristics of *aged fossil fuel organic carbon* (Table A1; Bellouin *et al.* 2011) to reflect the fact that POM contains a mixture of primary and secondary organic components.

The direct radiative effect calculations were performed by Alexandru Rap, but the candidate performed all subsequent analysis.

## 4.2.3 Aerosol Indirect Effect

The first aerosol indirect effect (AIE), or cloud albedo-effect, describes the radiative perturbation resulting from a change to the number concentration of cloud droplets, when a fixed cloud water content is assumed (Twomey 1977; Ramaswamy *et al.* 2001; Lohmann and Feichter 2005). As such, an accurate estimation of the cloud droplet number concentration (CDNC), before and after any given perturbation, is required.

#### 4.2.3.1 Determining Cloud Droplet Number Concentrations

Empirical relationships are often used to determine CDNC from aerosol mass or number concentration (e.g., Jones *et al.* 1994; Boucher and Lohmann 1995). However, these relationships do not account for the distribution of particle sizes and composition, or the maximum supersaturation of individual air parcels (Pringle *et al.* 2009). As an alternative, mechanistic parameterisations may be used to determine CDNC as a function of precursor aerosol concentrations and updraught velocity (e.g. Abdul-Razzak *et al.* 1998; Nenes and Seinfeld 2003; Fountoukis and Nenes 2005).

In the work presented here, CDNC are calculated using the parameterisation developed by Nenes and Seinfeld (2003), as updated by Fountoukis and Nenes (2005) and Barahona *et al.* (2010). Merikanto *et al.* (2010) previously demonstrated good agreement between aircraft measurements and CDNC values derived using this approach in combination with the GLOMAP model. The monthly mean aerosol size distribution is converted to a supersaturation distribution from which the number of activated particles can be determined at a given supersaturation. The maximum supersaturation ( $SS_{max}$ ) is computed for an adiabatic parcel and occurs when water availability from parcel cooling becomes equal to the rate at which water vapour is depleted by condensation onto activated particles. As such,  $SS_{max}$  depends upon the aerosol population and must be diagnosed at each point in time and space, rather than prescribed uniformly; in polluted environments with abundant potential CCN, there will be many sites for the condensation of water, and  $SS_{max}$  will be suppressed.

In this chapter, CDNC are calculated with a uniform updraught speed of 0.15 m s<sup>-1</sup> over sea and 0.3 m s<sup>-1</sup> over land, in line with those commonly observed for stratus clouds (Guibert *et al.* 2003, Peng *et al.* 2005). The global distribution of updraught velocities is uncertain, so the sensitivity of the radiative impact of biogenic SOA to the choice of updraught velocity is examined in *Chapter 5*.

## 4.2.3.2 Determining the AIE

The effective radius ( $r_e$ ) of a cloud droplet may be expressed relative to the density of water ( $\rho_w$ ; g cm<sup>-3</sup>), and the liquid water path (*LWP*; g m<sup>-2</sup>), thickness ( $\Delta z$ ; m) and CDNC (cm<sup>-3</sup>) of the cloud, as in Eqn. 4.1 (Bower *et al.* 1994):

$$r_e = 100 \times \left[\frac{LWP}{\Delta z} \times \frac{3}{4\pi\rho_w CDNC}\right]^{\frac{1}{3}}$$
(4.1)

For each perturbation experiment, the AIE is calculated relative to an equivalent control experiment. A uniform control cloud droplet effective radius  $(r_{el})$  of 10 µm is assumed to maintain consistency with the approach used by ISCCP to derive the *LWP*. For each perturbation experiment, a new field of effective radii  $(r_{e2})$  is calculated using Eqn. 4.2 (obtained by assuming fixed *LWP* and  $\Delta z$ , between experiments, in Eqn. 4.1; Spracklen *et al.* 2011a); CDNC<sub>1</sub> represents the simulation including SOA, and CDNC<sub>2</sub> represents the simulation with no SOA. The effective radii are modified only for low- and mid-level clouds, up to 600 hPa.

$$r_{e_2} = r_{e_1} \left[ \frac{CDNC_1}{CDNC_2} \right]^{\frac{1}{3}}$$
 (4.2)

The first AIE of biogenic SOA is then calculated by comparing net (SW + LW) radiative fluxes using the  $r_{e2}$  values derived for each perturbation experiment, to those of the control simulation with fixed  $r_{e1}$ . In these offline experiments, the second aerosol indirect (cloud lifetime) effect is not calculated.

## 4.3 Results

## 4.3.1 Direct Radiative Effect

An annual global mean DRE of between -0.08 W m<sup>-2</sup> and -0.78 W m<sup>-2</sup> is calculated for biogenic SOA in the present day atmosphere (Table 4.1), with the spatial distribution of the effect for  $ACT_mi$  shown in Figure 4.1 (*left*). The DRE from biogenic SOA is strongest at tropical latitudes, with local annual mean DREs as large as -4 W m<sup>-2</sup> over the Amazon and central Africa.

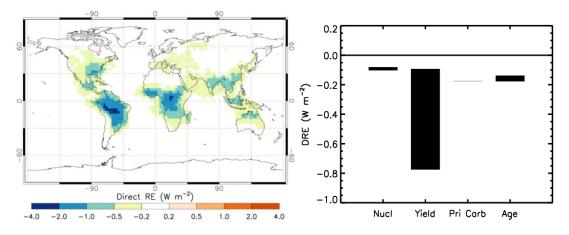


Figure 4.1: Annual mean all-sky DRE (left) due to biogenic SOA (*ACT\_mi*) relative to an equivalent simulation with no biogenic SOA. Variation in the global annual mean DRE (right) of biogenic SOA associated with several parameters; black bars indicate the range of values obtained for each set of experiments: *Nucl* (nucleation mechanism; Expt. 2, 14, 16, 18, 20), *Yield* (SOA yield; Expt. 4, 5, 6, 7), *Pri Carb* (primary carbonaceous emission size; Expt. 4, 12), *Age* (physical ageing; Expt. 4, 8, 10).

Figure 4.1 (*right*) shows the sensitivity of the global annual mean DRE to the processes examined in *Chapter 3*. The magnitude of the direct effect is highly sensitive to the amount of SOA (and therefore the amount of potential particle growth) included in the simulation, with the global annual mean varying from -0.09 W m<sup>-2</sup> when the SOA production yield is halved (source of 18.5 Tg(SOA) a<sup>-1</sup>), to -0.78 W m<sup>-2</sup> when the yield is increased by a factor of 5 (source of 185.1 Tg(SOA) a<sup>-1</sup>).

Exp. No.	Expt. Name	Δ <b>CDNC</b> (cm <sup>-3</sup> )	All-sky DRE (W m <sup>-2</sup> )	First AIE (W m <sup>-2</sup> )
2	ACT_m	+ 7.7 (+4.1%)	-0.10	-0.07
3	ACT_i	+5.9 (+3.2%)	-0.08	-0.06
4	ACT_mi	+8.2 (+4.4%)	-0.18	-0.06
5	ACT_mi_x0.5	+7.1 (+3.8%)	-0.09	-0.07
6	ACT_mi_x2	+9.0 (+4.8%)	-0.33	-0.04
7	ACT_mi_x5	+9.3 (+5.0%)	-0.78	+0.01
8	ACT_mi_noSOAage	+3.6 (+1.9%)	-0.14	-0.02
10	ACT_mi_fast_age	+4.9 (+2.5%)	-0.18	-0.02
12	ACT_mi_BCOCsmall	+10.4 (+5.2%)	-0.18	-0.12
14	BHN_m	+5.8 (+3.5%)	- 0.10	-0.05
16	Org1_m	+44.2 (+26.6%)	-0.08	-0.77
18	Org2_m	+14.3 (+7.2%)	-0.10	-0.22
20	Org3_m	+34.3 (+20.7%)		-0.59

Table 4.1: Global annual mean changes to CDNC at cloud height (approximately 900 hPa), all-sky DRE and first AIE, relative to an equivalent control simulation including no BVOC emission.

Varying the nucleation mechanism, results in little variability in the size of larger particles (e.g. Figure 3.8), and therefore little variability in the DRE (range -0.08 W m<sup>-2</sup> to -0.10 W m<sup>-2</sup>). The large increase in the number of nucleated particles and CCN simulated with the organically-mediated nucleation mechanisms is less important for the DRE as these particles are too small to influence the path of incoming solar radiation.

The DREs simulated by Rap *et al.* (2013) and O'Donnell *et al.* (2011) lie within the range we calculate here (Table 4.2). Goto *et al.* (2008) calculated a smaller DRE of -0.01 W m<sup>-2</sup>

but used a mass-only aerosol model which does not simulate the growth of particles associated with the condensation of secondary organic material.

Study	SOA Included	Clear-sky DRE (W m <sup>-2</sup> )	All-sky DRE (W m <sup>-2</sup> )	AIE (W m <sup>-2</sup> )
Goto <i>et al.</i> 2008	Monoterpenes		-0.01	-0.19
O'Donnell et al. 2011	Monoterpenes and isoprene	-0.29		+0.23*
Rap <i>et al.</i> 2013	Monoterpenes	-0.14	-0.13	-0.02
This study	Monoterpenes / isoprene / both		-0.08 to -0.78	+0.01 to -0.77

Table 4.2: Summary of	f previous estimates	of the radiative e	effects of SOA
ruole 1.2. Builling o	i previous estimates	or the radiative c	110000 01 0 01 1.

\*Also includes anthropogenic SOA

## 4.3.2 First Aerosol Indirect Radiative Effect

## **4.3.2.1** Cloud Droplet Number Concentration

The inclusion of biogenic SOA increases the calculated global annual mean CDNC by between 1.9% and 5.2% when the ACT nucleation mechanism is used (Table 4.1). Figure 4.2 shows the spatial distribution of the annual mean change in CDNC due to the presence of biogenic SOA in the *ACT\_mi* simulation. Over most regions, perturbations to calculated CDNC follow the same spatial pattern as the changes to CCN concentration described in *Chapter 3*. However, in regions with high pre-existing aerosol concentrations, such as those heavily affected by biomass burning, activation of additional CCN to cloud droplets can become limited by competition for water vapour. This is evident over South America and western Africa, where the largest changes to CDNC (Figure 4.2) do not coincide spatially with the largest changes to CCN (Figure 3.2, *lower*).

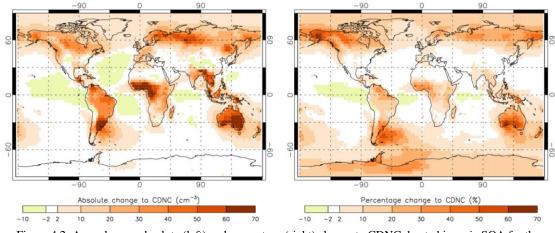


Figure 4.2: Annual mean absolute (left) and percentage (right) change to CDNC due to biogenic SOA for the ACT\_mi experiment (i.e., [CDNC]<sub>ACT\_mi</sub> – [CDNC]<sub>ACT</sub>).

As with CCN, relatively low absolute changes to CDNC in the southern hemisphere can lead to high fractional changes over the oceans. In the boreal regions, the inclusion of biogenic SOA increases the annual mean CDNC by up to 70% (Figure 4.2, *right*), due to very low background CDNC and therefore a high sensitivity to additional CCN. Small decreases (< 10%) in CDNC occur over some ocean regions due to the decreases in CCN described in *Chapter 3*.

Including monoterpene oxidation products in the particle formation rate equation yields the greatest increase in CDNC due to biogenic SOA (e.g., +20.7% for Org3). Figure 4.3 shows the spatial distribution of the annual mean CDNC change when the Org3 mechanism is used; as with CCN (Figure 3.5), large absolute increases are simulated at around 40°N, whilst fractional increases in excess of 100% are simulated above 50°N (Figure 4.3).

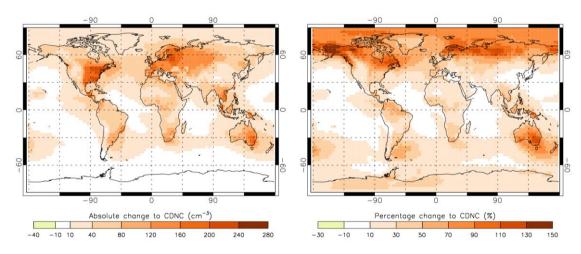


Figure 4.3: Annual mean absolute (left) and percentage (right) change to CDNC due to biogenic SOA for the  $Org3_m$  experiment (i.e.,  $[CDNC]_{Org3_m} - [CDNC]_{Org3}$ ).

## 4.3.2.2 Aerosol Indirect Effect

In the present day atmosphere, biogenic SOA exerts a global annual mean AIE of between +0.01 and -0.77 W m<sup>-2</sup> (Table 4.1). Figure 4.4 (*left*) shows the spatial distribution in the first AIE due to biogenic SOA for the  $ACT_mi$  simulation. A negative first AIE occurs in locations experiencing a large relative increase in CDNC (e.g., boreal Asia), or a modest increase in CDNC coinciding with a high fraction of low level cloud cover (e.g., Southern Hemisphere oceans). A positive AIE occurs in locations where a small decrease in CDNC (Figure 4.2) coincides with very high cloud fractions, such as the western coasts of Central America and the South Atlantic (Figure 4.4, *left*).

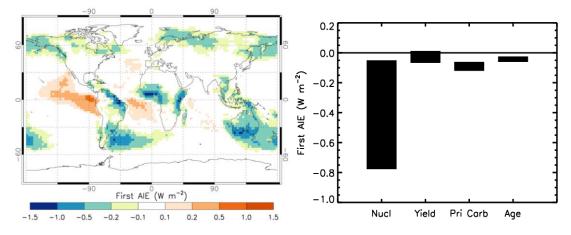


Figure 4.4: Annual mean first AIE (left) associated with the perturbation in cloud droplet number concentration due to biogenic SOA (*ACT\_mi*), relative to an equivalent simulation with no biogenic SOA. Variation in the global annual mean AIE (right) of biogenic SOA associated with several parameters; black bars indicate the range of values obtained for each set of experiments: *Nucl* (nucleation mechanism; Expt. 2, 14, 16, 18), *Yield* (SOA yield; Expt. 4, 5, 6, 7), *Pri Carb* (primary carbonaceous emission size; Expt. 4, 12), *Age* (physical ageing; Expt. 4, 8, 10).

Figure 4.4 (*right*) summarises the sensitivity of the global annual mean first AIE to the processes examined in *Chapter 3*. The simulated global annual mean first AIE is most sensitive to the nucleation mechanism used in the model (global annual mean range -0.05 W m<sup>-2</sup> to -0.77 W m<sup>-2</sup> for *BHN\_m* and *Org1\_m*, respectively); the inclusion of monoterpene oxidation products in the particle formation rate results in greater CCN and CDNC increases, and therefore a more negative global annual mean AIE, than either the BHN or ACT mechanisms. As with the ACT simulation, the organic nucleation mechanisms generate a negative AIE over the oceans between 30°S and 50°S (Figure 4.5), but Org1 and Org3 in particular also result in large negative forcings in the northern hemisphere due to high fractional CCN (Figure 3.4) and CDNC changes above 40°N (Figure 4.3).

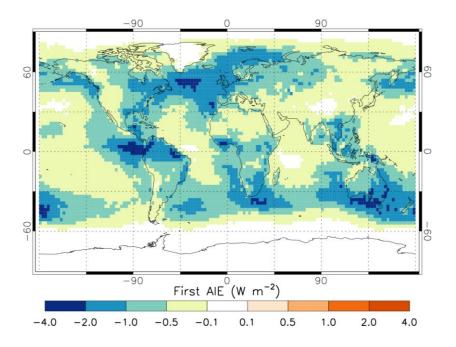


Figure 4.5: Annual mean first AIE associated with the perturbation in cloud droplet number concentration due to biogenic SOA in the *Org3\_m* simulation.

Using smaller size characteristics for primary carbonaceous emissions  $(ACT_mi_BCOCsmall)$  gives greater CCN and CDNC increases due to biogenic SOA, and subsequently a more substantial AIE of -0.12 W m<sup>-2</sup>. However, results from Section 3.4.3 suggest that this emission size generates too many CCN-sized particles. When secondary organic material is not able to age non-hydrophilic particles to the hydrophilic distribution ( $ACT_mi_noSOAage$ ), the global annual mean AIE reduces to -0.02 W m<sup>-2</sup>, due to smaller increases in CCN and CDNC.

Whilst increasing the yield of SOA production gives a greater global annual mean fractional increase in CDNC (Table 4.1), the increased yield enhances the small CDNC decreases in regions with very high cloud fraction, enhancing regions of positive AIE at tropical latitudes (Figure 4.6). As discussed in Section 3.4.1, increasing the SOA production yield also increases the size of the largest particles and supresses the formation and growth of new particles (e.g., Figure 3.7). Consequently, the dominant change to the size distribution, when biogenic SOA is included at an enhanced yield, but in the absence of organically-mediated nucleation, is to increase the size of particles

already large enough to act as CCN. Since more water is then required to activate each particle, this results in a smaller increase to CDNC. This process is particularly evident during the northern hemisphere summertime; consequently a smaller global annual mean first AIE is simulated with increasing yield (Table 4.1 and Figure 4.6).

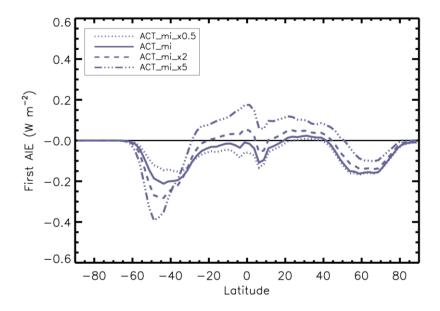


Figure 4.6: Annual zonal mean AIE from biogenic SOA when the yield of SOA production is varied by a factor of 10, using the ACT nucleation mechanism.

Over boreal forests, regional annual mean AIEs of between -0.1 W m<sup>-2</sup> and -0.5 W m<sup>-2</sup> are calculated for the *ACT\_mi* experiment (Figure 4.4, *left*). When an organic nucleation mechanism is used, e.g., Figure 4.5 for *Org3\_m*, regional annual mean AIEs up to -2 W m<sup>-2</sup> are calculated. As illustrated in Figure 4.7, much of the boreal region experiences a summertime (JJA mean) first AIE of between -1 W m<sup>-2</sup> and -5 W m<sup>-2</sup>, when the Org3 mechanism is used, matching the large cooling effect over these forest regions calculated by previous studies (Kurten *et al.* 2003; Spracklen *et al.* 2008a). However, the strongest radiative effects (up to -8 W m<sup>-2</sup>) are simulated over the ocean regions above 50°N which whilst experiencing smaller increases in CDNC, have higher cloud coverage (i.e., cloud fraction of 50-70% as compared to 0-30% over the land).

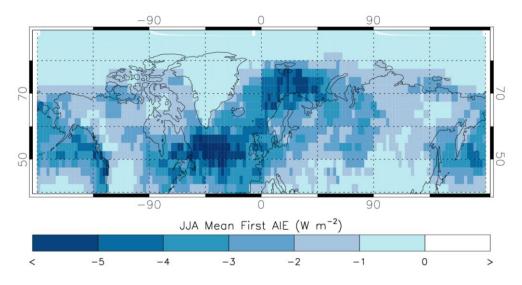


Figure 4.7: Summertime (June-July-August) mean first AIE from biogenic SOA in the Org3\_m experiment.

The AIE from monoterpene SOA (-0.19 W m<sup>-2</sup>) estimated by Goto *et al.* (2008) lies within the range of AIE we calculate here (Table 4.2). Rap *et al.* (2013) calculated a relatively small AIE due to biogenic SOA (-0.02 W m<sup>-2</sup>) using GLOMAP, however, they did not fully explore the ways that SOA can affect CCN and CDNC. The AIE calculated by Rap *et al.* (2013) was for a GLOMAP-mode simulation using only binary homogenous nucleation (as in *BHN\_m*) and requiring only one soluble monolayer to transfer non-hydrophilic particles to the hydrophilic distribution (as in *ACT\_mi\_fast\_age*), and is consistent with the AIEs calculated here (Table 4.1).

O'Donnell *et al.* (2011) simulated a positive AIE ( $\pm 0.23$  W m<sup>-2</sup>) for all SOA (i.e., biogenic plus anthropogenic), which lies outside the range calculated here. This positive AIE may be caused by the approach used by O'Donnell *et al.* (2011) to distribute SOA amongst the existing aerosol size distribution which results in SOA being distributed preferentially amongst larger size particles (i.e., those already large enough to act as CCN). Sensitivity of the AIE from biogenic SOA to assumptions concerning the distribution of SOA across the existing aerosol size distribution is examined in *Chapter 5*.

# 4.4 Sensitivity to Anthropogenic Emissions

Primary particulate (POM and BC) and gas-phase (SO<sub>2</sub>) emissions from anthropogenic sources were much lower in 1750 compared to the present day. These lower emissions result in lower simulated background (i.e., in the absence of biogenic SOA) concentrations of CCN and CDN. The impact of biogenic SOA may therefore have been different in a pre-industrial atmosphere. To explore this possibility the impact of biogenic SOA in an atmosphere with 1750 anthropogenic emissions was examined. In order to isolate the influence of anthropogenic emissions, BVOC emissions were held fixed, but their spatial distribution and magnitude would have been different in the pre-industrial period (e.g., Lathière *et al.* 2005).

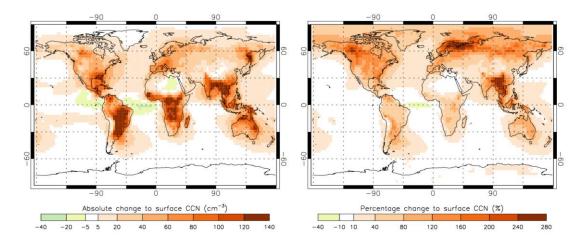


Figure 4.8: Simulated annual mean absolute (left) and percentage (right) changes to surface level CCN number concentration (calculated at 0.2% supersaturation) due to the inclusion of monoterpene and isoprene emissions in the ACT\_1750\_mi experiment

Including biogenic SOA in a pre-industrial atmosphere yields a lower absolute change in CCN number concentration ( $ACT_1750_mi$ ; +23.8 cm<sup>-3</sup>) than in the present day ( $ACT_mi$ ; +29.0 cm<sup>-3</sup>). This lower absolute change is due to fewer ultrafine particles being available (from nucleation and primary sources) for growth to CCN sizes, or physical ageing, by the secondary organic material. However, despite the lower absolute changes (Figure 4.8, *left*), the inclusion of biogenic SOA results in higher fractional

changes (Figure 4.8, *right*) in CCN number concentration due to a lower background in the pre-industrial atmosphere.

This increased fractional change in CCN, combined with lower background CDNC in the pre-industrial atmosphere results in a greater perturbation to global annual mean CDNC due to biogenic SOA ( $ACT_1750_mi$ ; +12.6%), as compared to the present day ( $ACT_mi$ ; +4.4%). Since the fractional change in CDNC constrains the AIE (Eqn. 4.2), a more substantial indirect effect of -0.19 W m<sup>-2</sup> is simulated with 1750 anthropogenic emissions (Table 4.3) compared to -0.06 W m<sup>-2</sup> with the same model setup in the present day.

Table 4.3: Global annual mean changes to surface-level CCN (at 0.2% supersaturation), CDNC at cloud height (approximately 900 hPa), and first AIE in a pre-industrial atmosphere, relative to an equivalent control simulation including no BVOC emission.

Exp.	<u>_</u>	ΔCCN	ΔCDNC	First AIE	
No.	Expt. Name	$(cm^{-3})$	(cm <sup>-3</sup> )	(W m <sup>-2</sup> )	
22	ACT_1750_mi	+23.8	+12.8	-0.19	
	AC1_1750_m	(+23.2%)	(+12.6%)	-0.17	
23	ACT_1750_mi_x0.5	+17.8	+10.7	-0.18	
		(+17.3%)	(+10.6%)	-0.10	
24	ACT 1750 mi v2	+30.5	+14.7	-0.19	
	ACT_1750_mi_x2	(+29.7%)	(14.5%)	-0.17	
25	ACT_1750_mi_x5	+38.9	+16.7	-0.17	
23	AC1_1750_111_X5	(+37.9)	(+16.4%)	-0.17	
27	Ong1 1750 m	+52.5	+34.9	0.05	
27	Org1_1750_m	(+56.7%)	(+37.9%)	-0.95	

Regions of both positive and negative change in CDNC are enhanced by the lower background concentration, so this global mean radiative effect represents a combination of northern hemisphere land and southern hemisphere ocean regions experiencing a more negative AIE and tropical oceans experiencing a more substantial positive AIE (Figure 4.9, *right*), as compared to an equivalent simulation using present day anthropogenic emissions (Figure 4.10).

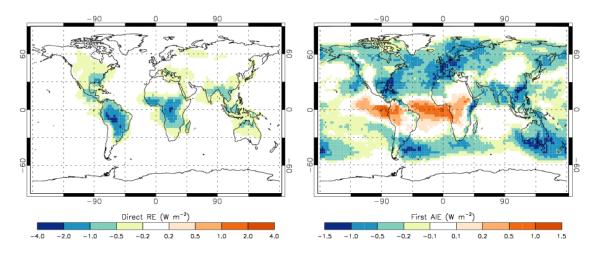


Figure 4.9: Annual mean DRE (left) and first AIE (right) from biogenic SOA when anthropogenic emissions from 1750 are included in GLOMAP (*ACT\_1750\_mi*).

The global mean first AIE obtained using the Org1 particle formation mechanism is also enhanced in the 1750 atmosphere (-0.95 W m<sup>-2</sup> as compared to -0.77 W m<sup>-2</sup> in the present day; Table 4.3). The 1750 annual mean first AIE is more negative at most latitudes (dashed red line in Figure 4.10), but between 30°S and 50°S, the radiative effect is stronger in the present day simulation (full red line Figure 4.10) due to higher SO<sub>2</sub> emissions in southern Africa and Australia, required to generate the H<sub>2</sub>SO<sub>4</sub> needed to form new particles using the Org1 nucleation mechanism.

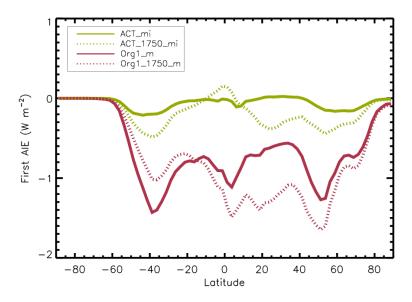


Figure 4.10: Annual zonal mean AIE from biogenic SOA in the present day (solid lines) and pre-industrial (dashed lines) when the ACT (green) and Org1 (red) nucleation mechanisms are used.

Due to the lower background CCN concentration, increasing the SOA yield when 1750 anthropogenic emissions are used results in a greater fractional enhancement to CCN than when present day emissions are used (Figure 4.11). The enhanced CCN sensitivity to changes in SOA yield translates into a greater CDNC and local AIE sensitivity which has implications for the first aerosol indirect radiative forcing (RF) due to anthropogenic aerosol emissions. To test this, an anthropogenic first indirect RF since 1750 was calculated by setting CDNC<sub>1</sub> in Eqn. 4.2 to the present day, and CDNC<sub>2</sub> to the value obtained from a simulation using anthropogenic emissions from 1750.

If a low source of biogenic SOA (18.5 Tg(SOA)  $a^{-1}$ ) is assumed, the first aerosol indirect RF from anthropogenic emission changes (1750 to present) is -1.16 Wm<sup>-2</sup>, but decreases in absolute value to -1.10 Wm<sup>-2</sup> when a large source (185.1 Tg(SOA)  $a^{-1}$ ) is assumed (Figure 4.12). If the Org1 mechanism is used in both present day and 1750 simulations (red circle in Figure 4.12), the calculated aerosol indirect RF is -1.04 Wm<sup>-2</sup>; that is 0.12 W m<sup>-2</sup> smaller than that derived using the ACT mechanism.

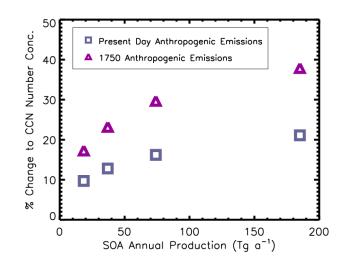


Figure 4.11: Percentage change to global annual mean CCN concentration, when biogenic SOA is included, simulated using the ACT nucleation mechanism at four different SOA production yields, with present day (blue squares) and pre-industrial (purple triangles) anthropogenic emissions

This variation in the first indirect anthropogenic RF, due to uncertainties in the amount of SOA available and its behaviour in the atmosphere, highlights the need to understand the baseline pre-industrial atmosphere and the magnitude of pre-existing natural radiative effects in order to constrain the radiative forcings due to human activities. Schmidt *et al.* (2012) demonstrated that uncertainty in volcanic SO<sub>2</sub> emissions plays a similar role in driving uncertainty in the anthropogenic first aerosol indirect RF.

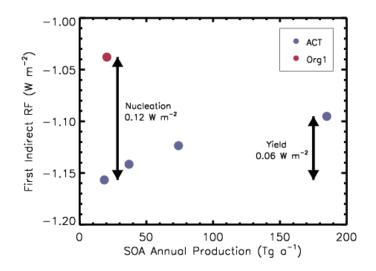


Figure 4.12: Anthropogenic first aerosol indirect RF from 1750 to present day, simulated using the ACT nucleation mechanism at four different yields for SOA production (purple circles), and using the Org1 nucleation mechanism with standard SOA production yield (red circle). Arrows highlight the RF sensitivity to assumptions about SOA yield and nucleation mechanism.

In contrast, the DRE of biogenic SOA is less sensitive to the presence of anthropogenic emissions. When the ACT mechanism is used (Figure 4.9, *left*), the same DRE is simulated with present day and 1750 anthropogenic emissions (-0.18 W m<sup>-2</sup>).

# 4.5 Summary and Conclusions

The inclusion of biogenic SOA leads to an increase (between 1.9% and 26.6%) in the global annual mean CDNC, calculated offline. The spatial changes to CDNC from the inclusion of biogenic SOA broadly match changes to CCN concentrations; however, the magnitude of CDNC change becomes limited by competition for water vapour in highly polluted regions, such as those affected by biomass burning.

The inclusion of biogenic SOA results in a present day global annual mean top-ofatmosphere DRE of between -0.08 W m<sup>-2</sup> and -0.78 W m<sup>-2</sup>. The DRE is most sensitive to the yield of SOA production and strongest in the tropics where there are high BVOC emissions and high insolation. In *Chapter 3*, it was shown that altering (either increasing or decreasing) the yield of SOA production reduces the agreement with observations of N<sub>80</sub> at 3 forested locations and the subset of CCN observations used (Section 3.4); the best agreement was found for a global production of 37 Tg(SOA) a<sup>-1</sup>, which gives a DRE from biogenic SOA of -0.18 W m<sup>-2</sup>.

The inclusion of biogenic SOA results in a present day global annual mean top-ofatmosphere first AIE of between +0.01 W m<sup>-2</sup> and -0.77 W m<sup>-2</sup>. The largest uncertainty in the AIE of biogenic SOA comes from the representation of new particle formation, specifically whether BVOC oxidation products contribute to the nucleation rate in the boundary layer. Including the oxidation products of monoterpenes in the particle formation rate equation gives up to an 11 times greater AIE, from biogenic SOA, than when H<sub>2</sub>SO<sub>4</sub> alone controls new particle formation. The best agreement between simulated and measured seasonal cycles in  $N_{80}$  is obtained when monoterpene oxidation products affect the new particle formation rate, suggesting that the magnitude of the global annual mean AIE from biogenic SOA could lie towards the most negative values in the estimated range presented here.

At high northern latitudes, monoterpene emissions from boreal forests result in summertime regional AIE of up to  $-5 \text{ W m}^{-2}$  over land, and  $-8 \text{ W m}^{-2}$  over ocean, when organic compounds influence the nucleation rate. This has implications for the overall climatic impact of high latitude forests and will be investigated in *Chapter 6*.

Figure 4.13 shows the REs calculated for a variety of natural aerosol sources by Rap *et al.* (2013), indicating that previously, the strongest natural DRE came from sea-salt and the strongest natural AIE from DMS and volcanic eruptions. The size of the DRE and AIE bars for SOA in Figure 4.13 are extended to represent the values with the largest absolute magnitude (-0.78 W m<sup>-2</sup> for the DRE and -0.77 W m<sup>-2</sup> for the AIE) calculated in this chapter. The extended bars indicate that at the outside of the uncertainty range examined here and in *Chapter 3*, biogenic SOA could exert the largest REs of the natural aerosol sources examined by Rap *et al.* (2013).

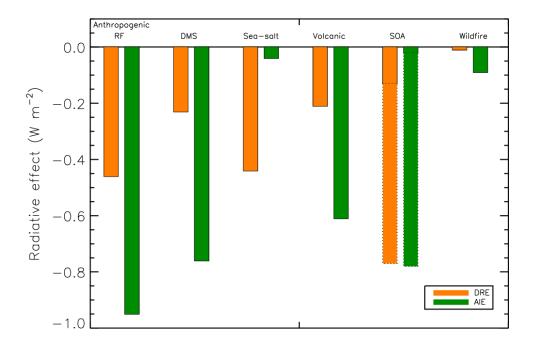


Figure 4.13: Anthropogenic indirect RF and REs from natural aerosol sources (DMS = dimethyl sulphide, SOA = biogenic secondary organic aerosol); values taken from Rap *et al.* (2013), SOA bars are extended with the values from this chapter.

When present-day anthropogenic aerosol emissions are replaced with those from 1750, the lower background aerosol concentrations result in a greater proportion of additional CCN becoming activated and therefore a more substantial AIE from biogenic SOA (-0.19 W m<sup>-2</sup> and -0.95 W m<sup>-2</sup> for  $ACT_mi$  and  $Org1_m$  respectively). As such, the AIE from biogenic SOA in 1750 is more sensitive to changes in the amount of SOA generated, and the nucleation mechanism used; adding uncertainty of 0.06 W m<sup>-2</sup> and 0.12 W m<sup>-2</sup> respectively to the magnitude of the first aerosol indirect RF from anthropogenic emissions since 1750 (Figure 4.12). This highlights the need to understand the natural "background" state of the atmosphere in order to accurately quantify the impact of human activities.

# Chapter 5: The Impact of Volatility Treatment on the Radiative Effect of Biogenic SOA

# 5.1 Introduction

The multi-step oxidation of BVOCs yields products with lower volatility, which allows their partitioning to the particle phase and the formation of SOA. The manner in which this SOA adds to the existing aerosol distribution will influence its impact on the number, size and composition of particles in the atmosphere; in particular, the number of particles that are able to act as CCN.

As described in *Chapter 1* and demonstrated in *Chapter 3*, the presence of SOA may increase CCN number concentrations by aiding the growth of smaller particles to CCN active sizes (Riipinen *et al.* 2012) and by making hydrophobic particles more hydrophilic (Petters *et al.* 2006). Conversely, the presence of SOA may act to decrease CCN number concentrations by growing existing CCN sized particles to even larger sizes and enhancing the coagulational scavenging of ultrafine particles, and the condensational scavenging of potential nucleating gases; thereby suppressing new particle formation and

growth as a route to CCN. The presence of these larger particles may also suppress the maximum in cloud supersaturation, allowing fewer potential CCN to become cloud droplets. Because the availability of CCN controls CDNC, and subsequently cloud albedo, the manner in which secondary organics are distributed has implications for the first AIE of biogenic SOA.

In this chapter, the radiative implications of two common approaches to modelling the behaviour of SOA will be quantified.

#### 5.1.1 The Volatility Treatment of SOA

The volatility, or vapour pressure, of a molecule is governed by its polarity and size. In the case of BVOCs, the addition of polar functional groups (i.e., through oxidation) will decrease their vapour pressure. The transfer of semi-volatile organic compounds between the gas and condensed phases can be treated using partitioning theory that assumes instant equilibration between organic vapours and the organic mass in the aerosol phase (Pankow 1994b; Odum et al. 1996). When simulating the aerosol size distribution, a consequence of this instant-equilibrium approach is that the net condensation of new organic mass scales with the existing organic mass size distribution of the particles (Riipinen et al. 2011). Because aerosol mass scales with volume, this means that particles requiring condensation to grow to climatically relevant sizes receive only a trivial fraction of the new SOA and subsequently do not grow. However, if the volatility of organic oxidation products is further reduced (i.e., through gas or particle-phase chemistry (Jimenez et al. 2009; Donahue et al. 2011)), they may condense kinetically according to the Fuchs-corrected surface area of existing particles and a larger proportion of the condensable mass will be added to the nucleation mode (Riipinen et al. 2011; Yu 2011; Zhang et al. 2012).

Neither approach fully describes the behaviour of SOA; the kinetic approach neglects the re-evaporation of semi-volatile organics whilst the thermodynamic approach is unable to account for the observed growth in particles smaller than 100 nm in diameter (Pierce *et al.* 2011; Riipinen *et al.* 2011; Yu 2011; Pierce *et al.* 2012).

Global aerosol microphysics models use either the thermodynamic (partitioning proportional to organic mass, e.g., Chung and Seinfeld 2002; Tsigaridis *et al.* 2005; Heald *et al.* 2008; Pye and Seinfeld 2010; O'Donnell *et al.* 2011) or the kinetic (condensation proportional to particle surface area e.g. Spracklen *et al.* 2006; Makkonen *et al.* 2009) assumptions described above. Riipinen *et al.* (2011) and D'Andrea *et al.* (2013) both found that the simulated global annual mean concentration of CCN-sized particles increased by approximately 10% when the kinetic (rather than thermodynamic) assumption was used, with regional increases of over 50%. Yu (2011) found that allowing successive stages of oxidation, and the generation of non-volatile products, to occur increased simulated CCN concentrations by 5-50% at the surface, over a version of the same model in which the thermodynamic assumption was applied.

These global aerosol microphysics models have been used to quantify the cloud albedo, or first indirect effect (AIE), of biogenic SOA, estimating values that span from positive (e.g. +0.23 W m<sup>-2</sup>; O'Donnell *et al.* 2011) to negative (-0.02 W m<sup>-2</sup>; Rap *et al.* 2013, and e.g. -0.07 W m<sup>-2</sup>; *Chapter 4* of this thesis). One difference between these studies is the method by which they represent the condensation of SOA, with O'Donnell *et al.* (2011) applying a thermodynamic approach whereas the other studies use the kinetic approach.

In this chapter, the implications of these two different approaches, used to distribute secondary organics amongst the existing aerosol population, for the sign and magnitude of the aerosol indirect effect from biogenic SOA will be examined. The direct radiative effect for a given aerosol component tends to scale linearly with the mass of particulate

material (e.g. Rap *et al.* 2013) and may be less sensitive to the relative proportion of ultrafine and larger particle growth.

# 5.2 Experimental Setup

In this chapter, two different global aerosol microphysics models are used to test the hypothesis that the sign of the first AIE of biogenic SOA is controlled by the manner in which secondary organic material is distributed across the aerosol size distribution.

The first global aerosol microphysics model used in this analysis is GLOMAP-mode, described in *Chapter 2* and used in *Chapter 3*. The second model is the global 3D chemical transport model GEOS-Chem (v8.02.02) (http://www.geos-chem.org) coupled with the TwO-Moment Aerosol Sectional (TOMAS) microphysics model (Adams and Seinfeld 2002; Snow-Kropla *et al.* 2011; Pierce *et al.* 2013). GEOS-Chem-TOMAS (referred to as "TOMAS" throughout the rest of this chapter) operates at a horizontal resolution of  $4^{\circ} \times 5^{\circ}$  with 30  $\sigma$ -pressure levels from the surface to 0.01 hPa. In contrast to GLOMAP-mode, TOMAS uses 40 log-normally spaced bins to simulate particles with diameters between 1 nm and 10  $\mu$ m. The TOMAS simulations in this chapter were performed by Jeffrey Pierce; all subsequent analysis was performed by the candidate.

The GLOMAP-mode experiments examined in this chapter are equivalent to the *ACT\_m* experiment described in *Chapter 3*; i.e., include BHN and an empirically derived mechanism for the activation rate of sulphuric acid clusters in the boundary layer (Section 2.1.4.1). In TOMAS, the same activation mechanism is used in the boundary layer, but BHN is parameterised according to Vehkamäki *et al.* (2002).

In TOMAS, secondary organic material is generated at a fixed molar yield of 10% (as compared to 13% in GLOMAP), from the oxidation of monoterpenes by  $O_3$ , OH and  $NO_3$ . In contrast to GLOMAP, which takes monoterpene emissions from the GEIA

database, TOMAS uses monoterpene emissions generated using the Model of Emissions of Gases and Aerosols from Nature (MEGAN) v2.0 (Guenther *et al.* 2006), generating 18.4 Tg(SOA) yr<sup>-1</sup> (as compared to 20.4 Tg(SOA) yr<sup>-1</sup> in GLOMAP).

In this chapter, SOA is distributed across the aerosol size distribution using two different approaches. In both models the standard approach (described in Section 2.1.4.3) is to assume secondary organic mass ( $M_{SOA}$ ) condenses as if it were non-volatile, to the Fuchs-corrected surface area (i.e., the kinetic approach), such that the rate of change of  $M_{SOA}$  in each mode/bin *i*, may be described as in Eqn. 5.1, where  $S_{org}$  represents the gas-phase concentration of secondary organic material:

$$\frac{dM_{SOA_i}}{dt} = \frac{C_i N_i}{\sum_{i=1,5} C_i N} \times \frac{dS_{org}}{dt}$$
(5.1)

Where  $C_i$  represents the condensation coefficient for each mode *i* (Eqn. 2.8) and  $N_i$  is the particle number concentration. Here, a sensitivity study is conducted in which the amount of secondary organic material entering the aerosol phase is partitioned between the size modes/bins according to Eqn. 5.2, where  $M_{OAi}$  is the pre-existing organic mass in mode *i* (i.e. the thermodynamic assumption):

$$\frac{dM_{SOA_i}}{dt} = \frac{M_{OA_i}}{\sum_{i=1,5} M_{OA_i}} \times \frac{dS_{org}}{dt}$$
(5.2)

Because the aim is to quantify the impact of changes in the size of particles to which the SOA condenses, SOA is otherwise treated identically between the two different approaches and is not allowed to re-partition into the gas phase.

With each model one simulation without biogenic SOA (*NoSOA*) is completed, as well as two simulations with biogenic SOA (*KinSOA* and *ThermSOA*). The resulting changes to CDNC due to the inclusion of biogenic SOA (i.e., *KinSOA - NoSOA* or *ThermSOA* -

*NoSOA*) are calculated using the parameterisation developed by Nenes and Seinfeld (2003) and described in *Chapter 4*, with a uniform updraught velocity of 0.2 m s<sup>-1</sup>. The first AIE of biogenic SOA is then calculated using the offline radiative transfer model of Edwards and Slingo (1996), and the approach described in *Chapter 4*. The global distribution of cloud updraught velocity is uncertain; to determine the sensitivity of these results to updraught velocity, the first AIE is calculated for a range of globally uniform updraught values  $(0.1 - 0.5 \text{ m s}^{-1})$ .

# 5.3 Results

Figure 5.1 compares the observed aerosol size distributions at a boreal forest location (Hyytiälä, Finland), with those simulated by GLOMAP and TOMAS using the kinetic and thermodynamic approaches. At Hyytiälä, the simulated size distribution will be sensitive to many processes including new particle formation, the amount of SOA, and the characteristics of primary particles; the intention here is to demonstrate that the aerosol size distribution is also sensitive to the treatment of SOA condensation.

The number of particles between 40 and 200 nm in diameter is underestimated by both models, in every simulation (Figure 5.1). Results from *Chapter 3* suggest that organically-mediated new particle formation (not included here) may be required to accurately simulate the number of particles between 20 and 100 nm (Figure 3.8). In the absence of SOA, a large nucleation mode is simulated by both models (dashed blue lines in Figure 5.1). In GLOMAP, when the kinetic approach is applied (green lines in Figure 5.1), some secondary organic material condenses onto particles in the nucleation mode (0.26% of the total flux in GLOMAP), enabling their growth into the 40 – 200 nm size range. This is consistent with Riipinen *et al.* (2011) who found that variation in the growth rate of particles between 7 – 20 nm was linked to the presence of organic oxidation products.

When the thermodynamic approach is applied (red line in Figure 5.1), no secondary organic material is added to the nucleation mode, suppressing the growth of these particles. Rather, the secondary organic material is added to particles in the Aitken and accumulation modes with greater existing organic mass.

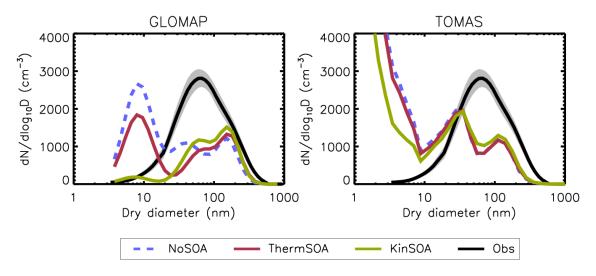


Figure 5.1: Simulated (GLOMAP (left) and TOMAS (right)) and measured (multi-annual; 1996-2006) mean size distribution at Hyytiälä during June-July-August. The grey shaded region represents the mean (over June-July-August) standard deviation of the annual mean size distributions.

Table 5.1 summarises the flux of secondary organic material to particles of different sizes in GLOMAP. Using the thermodynamic approach, particles smaller than 100 nm diameter receive less than half the amount of secondary organic material per particle  $(2.97 \times 10^{-12} \text{ ng}(\text{SOA}) \text{ particle}^{-1} \text{ sec}^{-1})$ , as compared to the kinetic approach (6.77 x  $10^{-12} \text{ ng}(\text{SOA})$  particle<sup>-1</sup> sec<sup>-1</sup>). This response is consistent with Yu (2011) and with D'Andrea *et al.* (2013) who observed a similar relative response across 20 ground-based measurement sites, when comparing a kinetic and thermodynamic approach.

distribution in GLOMAP. $D_g$ is the geometric mean diameter for each mode.							
Distribution of secondary organic material		Smaller	than 100 nm	Larger than 100 nm			
		Nucleation $(D_g < 10 \text{ nm})$ Aitken $(10 < D_g < 100 \text{ nm})$		Accumulation $(100 \text{ nm} < D_g < 1 \mu \text{m})$	Coarse $(D_g > 1 \mu m)$		
	% of total flux	0.26 %	20.94 %	78.26 %	0.55 %		
Kinetic	Total flux		Γg(SOA) a <sup>-1</sup> (SOA) particle <sup>-1</sup> sec <sup>-1</sup>	15.92 Tg(SOA) a <sup>-1</sup> 1.50 x 10 <sup>-11</sup> ng(SOA) particle <sup>-1</sup> sec <sup>-1</sup>			
	% of total flux	0.00 %	21.12 %	78.85 %	0.03 %		
Thermodynamic	Total flux	3.79 Tg(SOA) a <sup>-1</sup> 2.97 x 10 <sup>-12</sup> ng(SOA) particle <sup>-1</sup> sec <sup>-1</sup>		14.17 Tg(SOA) a <sup>-1</sup> 1.74 x 10 <sup>-11</sup> ng(SOA) particle <sup>-1</sup> sec <sup>-1</sup>			

Table 5.1: Global annual mean fluxes of secondary organic material, in the model surface layer, to the aerosol size distribution in GLOMAP.  $D_{\sigma}$  is the geometric mean diameter for each mode.

#### 5.3.1 Changes to Cloud Droplet Number Concentration

Figure 5.2 shows the simulated change in annual mean CDNC due to the presence of biogenic SOA in both models, using an updraught velocity of 0.2 m s<sup>-1</sup>. The spatial pattern of CDNC change, upon inclusion of biogenic SOA, varies between the two models.

As in *Chapter 4*, under the kinetic approach, GLOMAP simulates the largest fractional increases to CDNC over boreal regions and southern hemisphere oceans (Figure 5.2a). In TOMAS, the largest increases are simulated over tropical land regions (Figure 5.2c). Over most regions, GLOMAP simulates higher background CDNC than TOMAS, with the annual global mean NoSOA CDNC approximately 60% (~70 cm<sup>-3</sup>) higher in GLOMAP. However, annual mean CDNC in TOMAS are up to 70% (~70 cm<sup>-3</sup>) higher over some continental boreal regions of Canada and Siberia, than GLOMAP CDNC; therefore, a small absolute CDNC change over the boreal region in GLOMAP results in a relatively larger fractional effect. Additionally, monoterpene emission rates in the GEIA inventory (used here in GLOMAP) are up to a factor of 10 higher over some boreal regions than generated by MEGANv2.0 those (used here in TOMAS) (Sakulyanontvittaya et al. 2008); this is discussed in further detail in Chapter 6.

Over tropical regions, particle concentrations are dominated by biomass burning emissions during the dry season. Both models use primary carbonaceous emissions from the GFED inventory, but these are emitted with a number median diameter of 150 nm in GLOMAP (see Section 2.1.3), and 100 nm in TOMAS. This means that for the same mass of biomass burning emission, a greater number of smaller particles (that require SOA for growth to CCN sizes) are emitted in TOMAS over tropical regions, than in GLOMAP. Additionally, monoterpene emissions generated by MEGANv2.0 are up to 100% higher over the tropics than those from the GEIA inventory (Guenther *et al.* 2012); discussed further in *Chapter 6*. The additional supply of ultrafine particles, and greater

amount of SOA produced in the tropics by TOMAS leads to a higher CDNC sensitivity to biogenic SOA in this region. Since the background CDNC over the tropics is higher in GLOMAP, which reduces the maximum supersaturation, this will allow fewer additional CCN sized particles to form cloud droplets.

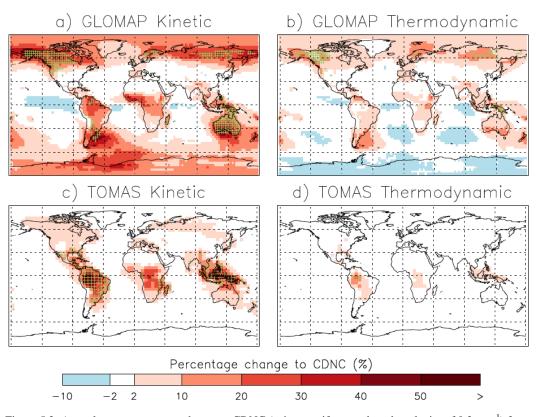


Figure 5.2: Annual mean percentage change to CDNC (using a uniform updraught velocity of  $0.2 \text{ m s}^{-1}$ ) from biogenic SOA in GLOMAP (upper) and TOMAS (lower), in the model level which corresponds to low level cloud base (mean pressure of approximately 900 hPa). Secondary organic mass is distributed according to the kinetic approach in panels *a* and *c*, and according to the thermodynamic approach in panels *b* and *d*. Green crosses denote grid cells with more than a 30% increase in particles with diameter greater than 80 nm (N<sub>80</sub>) when biogenic SOA is included.

As was also seen in *Chapter 4*, the inclusion of biogenic SOA in GLOMAP results in reductions in CDNC over some oceanic regions downwind of biomass burning emission regions (Figure 5.2*a*). This reduction in CDNC is due to the condensation of SOA onto hydrophobic biomass burning aerosols (i.e. physical ageing), enhancing their loss rate by wet deposition. In the *NoSOA* simulations, this process takes longer and these particles may survive to act as CCN over the oceanic regions. The process of explicitly ageing hydrophobic biomass burning emissions by SOA is not represented in TOMAS (aerosol

ageing occurs on a fixed 1.5 day timescale), so the reduction in CDNC over the oceans is not seen in Figure 5.2c.

When the thermodynamic approach is applied, the secondary organic material is preferentially distributed towards the aerosol modes/bins with the greatest existing mass of organic material, thereby increasing the size of larger particles. Consequently, the growth of ultrafine particles is lower than with the kinetic approach, and far fewer model grid cells (in both models, Figure 5.2) experience more than a 30% increase in the number of particles with dry diameter greater than 80 nm ( $N_{80}$ ). As a result, regional annual mean increases in CDNC are limited to approximately 30% in both models (Figure 5.2*b*,*d*). In GLOMAP, regions of negative CDNC change are larger than with the kinetic approach because the increased scavenging of hydrophobic particles is not balanced by the growth of ultrafine particles as it was in the kinetic approach.

Table 5.2 reports the change in global annual mean CDNC when biogenic SOA is included in both models. Across all five updraught velocities ( $0.1 \text{ m s}^{-1}$  to  $0.5 \text{ m s}^{-1}$ ), and in both models, the kinetic approach leads to a larger global annual mean increase in CDNC than the thermodynamic approach. Increasing the updraught velocity increases the absolute and fractional change in CDNC at cloud base due to biogenic SOA. However, the relative kinetic to thermodynamic response remains consistent across the five updraught velocities (Table 5.2).

Table 5.2: Global annual mean change to cloud droplet number concentration (CDNC), calculated using five globally uniform updraught velocities, in the model level which corresponds to low-level cloud base (mean pressure of approximately 900 hPa), and first aerosol indirect effect (AIE), reported to 2 decimal places, resulting from the inclusion of biogenic SOA in GLOMAP and TOMAS simulations using the kinetic and thermodynamic approaches. A mean ΔCDNC and first AIE for each model is calculated, assuming that each updraught velocity is equally likely to occur.

		Distribution of secondary organic material				Ratio of CDNC
Model	Updraught velocity (m s <sup>-1</sup> )	Kinetic		Thermodynamic		change:
		∆ <b>CDNC</b>	First	ΔCDNC	First	$\Delta \mathbf{CDNC}_{kin}$ /
	、 <i>,</i>	$(cm^{-3})$	AIE	$(cm^{-3})$	AIE	
		(em )	(W m <sup>-2</sup> )	(em)	(W m <sup>-2</sup> )	$\Delta \text{CDNC}_{therm}$
	0.1	+2.7 (+2.0%)	-0.05	+0.7 (+0.6%)	+0.03	3.6
	0.2	+6.3 (+3.4%)	-0.07	+2.1 (+1.1%)	+0.02	3.0
GLOMAP	0.3	+9.1 (+4.3%)	-0.08	+3.1 (+1.5%)	+0.03	2.9
OLOWAI	0.4	+11.4 (+4.9%)	-0.08	+3.9 (+1.7%)	+0.03	2.9
	0.5	+12.9 (+5.3%)	-0.08	+4.4 (+1.8%)	+0.03	2.9
	Mean	+8.4 (+4.0%)	-0.07	+2.9 (+1.3%)	+0.03	3.0
	0.1	+2.7 (+3.2%)	-0.03	+0.3 (+0.3%)	0.00	9.6
	0.2	+3.9 (+3.4%)	-0.03	+0.3 (+0.3%)	0.00	11.4
TOMAS	0.3	+5.0 (+3.7%)	-0.03	+0.5 (+0.3%)	0.00	10.5
	0.4	+5.9 (+3.9%)	-0.03	+0.5 (+0.4%)	0.00	10.6
	0.5	+6.6 (+4.0%)	-0.03	+0.6 (+0.4%)	0.00	10.8
	Mean	+4.8 (+3.6%)	-0.03	+0.5 (+0.3%)	0.00	10.6

#### 5.3.2 First Aerosol Indirect Effect

Figure 5.3 shows the spatial variation in annual mean first AIE (when CDNC have been calculated using an updraught velocity of  $0.2 \text{ m s}^{-1}$ ), with the kinetic and thermodynamic approach, for both models. The kinetic approach gives biogenic SOA a negative global

annual mean first AIE in GLOMAP (-0.07 W m<sup>-2</sup>; updraught velocity of 0.2 m s<sup>-1</sup>), with regions of annual mean negative forcing peaking at high northern latitudes (~60°N), the tropics, and southern hemisphere (30 – 50°S). The small CDNC decreases seen over the tropical oceans in Figure 5.2*a* result in a positive radiative effect (Figure 5.3*a*), reducing the magnitude of the first AIE at 0° latitude (Figure 5.4, *upper*). In TOMAS, the kinetic approach gives a global annual mean first AIE of -0.03 W m<sup>-2</sup> (for all updraught velocities; Table 5.2), peaking at tropical latitudes where the greatest increase in CDNC is simulated (Figure 5.2*c*).

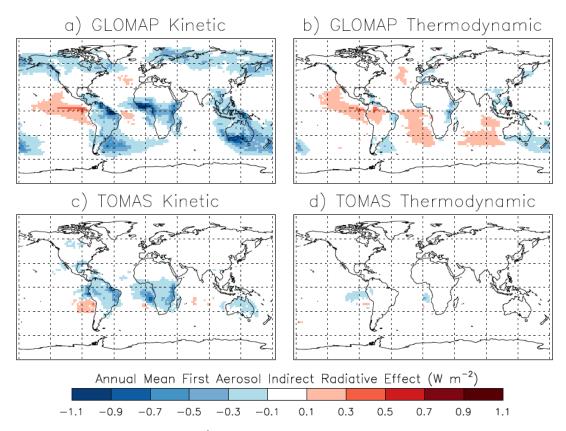


Figure 5.3: Annual mean first AIE (W  $m^{-2}$ ) from biogenic SOA in GLOMAP (upper) and TOMAS (lower) when secondary organic mass distributed kinetically (*a* and *c*) and thermodynamically (*b* and *d*).

Figure 5.4 shows the zonal mean first AIE, across the five updraught velocities, for each treatment in both models. In GLOMAP, taking the thermodynamic approach gives a global annual mean first AIE of +0.02 W m<sup>-2</sup> (with an updraught velocity of 0.2 m s<sup>-1</sup>), with the zonal mean peaking at around 0° latitude (Figure 5.4, *upper*). This occurs due to decreases in CDNC at the height of low-level (Figure 5.2*b*) and mid-level (Figure 5.5,

*upper*) clouds in the tropics. The higher altitude (~600 hPa) decrease occurs as a result of the enhanced condensation sink for vapours (e.g.  $H_2SO_4$ ) at the surface (due to larger particle size), and subsequent suppression of binary nucleation in the free troposphere. In TOMAS, a negligible global annual mean first AIE (0.00 W m<sup>-2</sup> to 2 decimal places) is simulated with the thermodynamic approach due to the small change in CDNC (Table 5.2 and Figure 5.2).

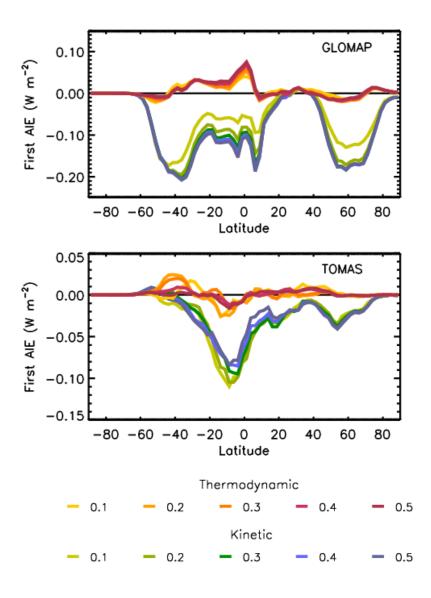


Figure 5.4: Annual zonal mean first AIE due to biogenic SOA in GLOMAP (upper) and TOMAS (lower), based on CDNC changes calculated at five different globally uniform updraught velocities (0.1 m s<sup>-1</sup> - 0.5 m s<sup>-1</sup>); note different vertical axis scales.

Due to the greater change in CDNC with increasing updraught velocity, the GLOMAP global annual mean first AIE becomes more negative (Table 5.2), reaching -0.08 W m<sup>-2</sup> with an updraught velocity between 0.3 m s<sup>-1</sup> and 0.5 m s<sup>-1</sup>. When the thermodynamic approach is taken in GLOMAP, the global annual mean first AIE varies by less than 0.005 W m<sup>-2</sup> when the updraught velocity is modified (Table 5.2), due to the enhancement of regions of both positive and negative AIE with increasing updraught velocity (Figure 5.4).

When the kinetic approach is applied in TOMAS, and the updraught velocity is increased, the calculated first AIE remains consistent at -0.03 W m<sup>-2</sup> (Table 5.2), with much of the AIE simulated at tropical latitudes (Figure 5.3*c* and Figure 5.4, *lower*). This occurs because whilst the magnitude of the zonal mean CDNC increase at cloud base (over  $20^{\circ}$ S- $20^{\circ}$ N) increases, CDNC at the altitude of mid-level clouds decreases further (Figure 5.5).

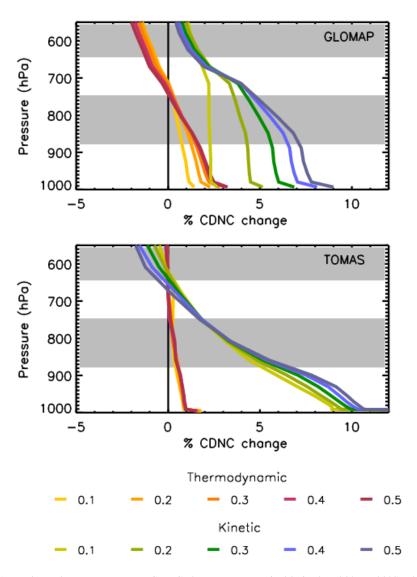


Figure 5.5: Annual zonal mean percentage CDNC change, over tropical latitudes  $(20^{\circ}N - 20^{\circ}S)$ , due to biogenic SOA in GLOMAP (upper) and TOMAS (lower), at five different globally uniform updraught velocities (between 0.1 m s<sup>-1</sup> and 0.5 m s<sup>-1</sup>); grey shaded areas indicate pressure levels in which cloud fraction is greater than 10% (in the ISCCP dataset for the year 2000) at these latitudes.

The global mean first AIE shows a strong seasonal cycle in GLOMAP when the kinetic approach is applied, peaking in August (Figure 5.6) due to a substantial negative first AIE during NH summertime. In TOMAS, a negligible seasonal cycle is simulated when the kinetic approach is applied due to the dominance of CDNC change in the tropics, where monoterpene emissions are high throughout the year, and the less substantial change to CDNC at high northern latitudes as compared to GLOMAP. When the thermodynamic approach is applied, the first AIE calculated from both models shows a negligible seasonal cycle, again due to the dominance of tropical forcings (Figure 5.3)

and because regions of small positive and small negative first AIE balance throughout the year.

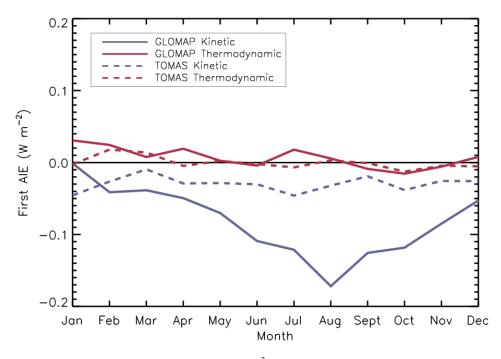


Figure 5.6: Seasonal cycle in global mean first AIE (W m<sup>-2</sup>) simulated using GLOMAP (solid lines) and TOMAS (dashed lines); partitioning organics according to the kinetic model (purple lines) and thermodynamic model (red lines).

# 5.4 Summary and Conclusions

In this chapter, two different detailed microphysics models are used to examine the implication of volatility treatment on the radiative impact of biogenic SOA. Despite differences in the spatial distribution of CDNC changes between the two models, the magnitude of the CDNC response is strongly controlled by the size of particles onto which secondary organic material is distributed.

The kinetic approach, which enables organic oxidation products to condense upon the smallest particles, facilitating their growth to larger sizes, increased annual mean CDNC and gave a negative first AIE when biogenic SOA was included. Applying the thermodynamic approach suppresses the growth of the smallest particles; globally this

resulted in a smaller increase to simulated CDNC when biogenic SOA was included, and gave a negligible or small positive first AIE. Despite structural differences in the two models used here, a consistent response has been found; indicating that these findings have general implications for global aerosol models.

In this chapter it has been shown that the approach used to model SOA controls the sign of the calculated first AIE. Accurately simulating the condensation of SOA onto ultrafine particles is important when evaluating processes that depend strongly on changes to ultrafine particle number, such as the AIE.

The current GLOMAP-approach partitions SOA entirely kinetically, and may therefore underestimate the amount of SOA condensing onto larger particles. Ultimately, a combination of the thermodynamic and kinetic approaches will be required in order to accurately represent the range of differing volatility compounds present in the atmosphere. As gas- and particle-phase atmospheric chemistry tends to reduce the volatility of organic compounds, accounting for the presence of non-volatiles, as well as semi-volatiles, is important. Improving on existing first attempts (e.g., Riipinen *et al.* 2011; Yu 2011) will require a more detailed understanding of the pathways by which organic compounds of differing volatilities are generated, and their relative contributions to the growth of particles of different sizes.

# **Chapter 6: The Radiative Effects of Deforestation**

# 6.1 Introduction

In *Chapter 4*, it was shown that the presence of biogenic SOA has a considerable radiative influence, when compared to other natural components of the atmosphere. In particular, the first AIE due to biogenic SOA may be substantial if biogenic oxidation products contribute to the initial stages of new particle formation.

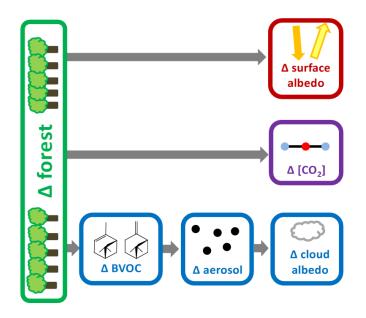


Figure 6.1: Summary of the impacts of deforestation that are examined in this chapter.

In this chapter, a land-surface model is used to explore the impact of several idealised deforestation scenarios on BVOC emission levels. The subsequent change in aerosol properties is then calculated using GLOMAP-mode, and the first AIE is evaluated using the Edwards-Slingo (ES) radiative transfer model. To put the magnitude of this indirect radiative effect into context, the equivalent radiative effects of changes to surface albedo and atmospheric carbon dioxide concentration associated with deforestation are also evaluated (Figure 6.1).

# 6.2 Experimental Setup

#### 6.2.1 The Community Land Model and MEGAN

The land component of the Community Atmosphere Model (CAM) and the Community Climate System Model (CCSM), known as the Community Land Model (CLMv4.0; Oleson *et al.* 2010; Lawrence *et al.* 2011), was used to generate speciated BVOC emission fields, according to the Model of Emissions of Gases and Aerosols from Nature (MEGANv2.1; Guenther *et al.* 2012). The CLM operates at a horizontal resolution of  $2.5^{\circ}$  (lon) x  $1.9^{\circ}$  (lat). The CLM simulations described in this chapter were performed by Stephen Arnold; the land cover files were modified by the candidate and all subsequent analysis was performed by the candidate.

For this work the CLM was used in the offline configuration, i.e., not coupled to either the CAM or CCSM, and atmospheric forcing (precipitation, solar radiation and atmospheric pressure, specific humidity, temperature and wind) was taken from the observationally derived dataset of Qian *et al.* (2006), based on NCEP/NCAR reanalysis. All simulations are performed for the year 2000. Since the simulations were run without an interactive carbon-nitrogen cycle, a 40 year spin-up period was sufficient to allow the soil moisture of the CLM to establish equilibrium with the driving meteorology. The surface of each grid cell in the CLM is divided into different plant functional types (PFTs; Table 6.1), plus non-vegetated surface. Figure 6.2 indicates the dominant PFT in each grid cell; the distribution of PFTs, and their associated leaf area indices (LAI;  $m^2_{leaf}$  area  $m^{-2}_{ground area}$ ), are obtained from MODIS (MODerate Resolution Imaging Spectroradiometer) satellite data (Myneni *et al.* 2002; Lawrence and Chase 2007). This standard distribution of PFTs and LAIs will form the basis of the control, i.e., no deforestation, scenario.

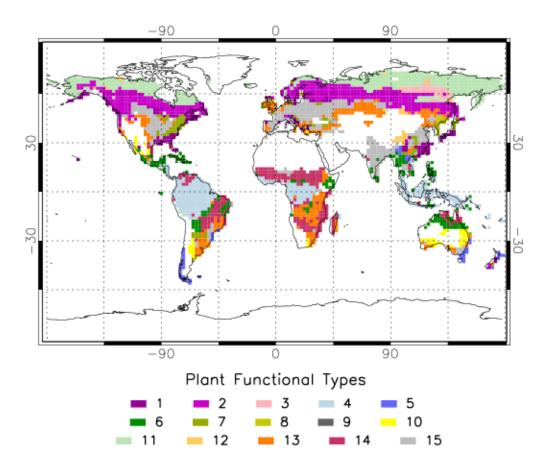


Figure 6.2: Dominant PFT (i.e., highest fraction occupied) in each grid cell for the standard land-cover configuration of the CLM; legend values correspond to Table 6.1.

#### 6.2.1.1 MEGANv2.1

The flux *F* (µg m<sup>-2</sup><sub>ground area</sub> h<sup>-1</sup>) of a BVOC, *i*, to the atmosphere is calculated as in Eqn. 6.1. Here,  $\gamma_i$  is an emission activity factor accounting for responses to meteorological and phonological conditions and  $\varepsilon_{i,j}$  is the PFT specific emission factor (given in Table 6.1) at standard conditions of light (photosynthetically active radiation flux of 1000 µmol m<sup>-2</sup> s<sup>-1</sup>), leaf temperature (303.15 K) and leaf area (for each vegetation type *j*), with fractional grid cell coverage of  $\chi_j$ .

$$F_i = \gamma_i \sum_j \varepsilon_{i,j} \chi_j \tag{6.1}$$

Each emission activity factor,  $\gamma_i$ , is calculated according to Eqn. 6.2, where  $C_{CE}$  represents the canopy environment constant (derived such that emission activity will equal 1 under standard conditions), and  $\gamma_P$ ,  $\gamma_T$ ,  $\gamma_A$ ,  $\gamma_{SM}$  and  $\gamma_C$  are scaling terms for light, temperature, leaf age, soil moisture and CO<sub>2</sub> inhibition (for isoprene only; Section 1.2.4.1), respectively; expressions for  $\gamma$  terms are given in Section 2.2 of Guenther *et al.* (2012).

$$\gamma_i = C_{CE} \, LAI \, \gamma_P \, \gamma_T \gamma_A \gamma_{SM} \gamma_C \tag{6.2}$$

Figure 6.3 indicates the fraction of the global total monoterpene emission, simulated by MEGANv2.1, contributed by individual compounds. Throughout the year,  $\alpha$ -pinene comprises the largest fraction of the emission at almost 50%, followed by trans- $\beta$ -ocimene and  $\beta$ -pinene at between 10 and 15%; consistent with the global emission estimates in Table 1.1. This confirms that, as a simplification in GLOMAP, applying the reaction characteristics of  $\alpha$ -pinene to all monoterpenes is justifiable.

	surface type used to replace forest PFTs in the deforestation experiments.						
PFT		Land	Land Emission factor, $\varepsilon$		Replaced		
	Dont Functional True	area (µg m <sup>-2</sup> h		<sup>h-1</sup> )	with in		
No.	Plant Functional Type	covered		α-	deforestation		
(Fig. 6.2)		$(10^{12} \text{ km}^2)$	Isoprene	pinene	scenarios		
1	Needleleaf evergreen tree:	5.46	600	500	$C_3$ grass		
	temperate	5.10	000	200	03 gruss		
2	Needleleaf evergreen tree:	10.6	3000	500	C <sub>3</sub> Arctic		
	boreal	1010	2000	200	grass		
3	Needleleaf deciduous tree:	1.46	1	510	C <sub>3</sub> Arctic		
5	boreal		1	510	grass		
4	Broadleaf evergreen tree:	15.6	7000	600	C <sub>4</sub> grass		
	tropical				- + 8		
5	Broadleaf evergreen tree:	2.64	10000	400	$C_3$ grass		
C	temperate				- 5 8		
6	Broadleaf deciduous tree:	12.9	7000	600	C <sub>4</sub> grass		
	tropical				-4 8		
7	Broadleaf deciduous tree:	5.33	10000	400	$C_3$ grass		
	temperate						
8	Broadleaf deciduous tree:	2.14	11000	400	C <sub>3</sub> Arctic		
	boreal				grass		
	PFTs that are not modified						
9	Evergreen temperate shrub	0.18	2000	200			
10	Deciduous temperate shrub	4.15	4000	300			
11	Deciduous boreal shrub	9.33	4000	200			
12	C <sub>3</sub> Arctic grass	4.94	1600	2			
13	C <sub>3</sub> grass	14.3	800	2			
14	C <sub>4</sub> grass	13.2	200	2			
15	Сгор	16.3	1	2			

Table 6.1: Plant functional types, land area covered by each in the control experiment, and their emissions factors for isoprene and the dominant monoterpene ( $\alpha$ -pinene); taken from Guenther *et al.* (2012). Also given is the land-surface type used to replace forest PFTs in the deforestation experiments.

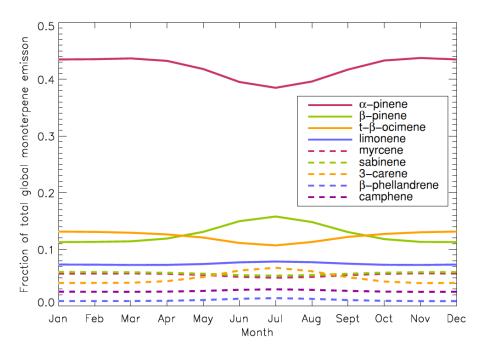


Figure 6.3: Fraction of global total monoterpene emission contributed by individual compounds; only those compounds making a greater contribution than 1% are shown.

# 6.2.1.2 Comparison to Previous BVOC Emission Inventory

Using the control distribution of PFTs (Figure 6.2), the CLM generates 480 Tg(C) a<sup>-1</sup> of isoprene, slightly less than the 503 Tg(C) a<sup>-1</sup> in the GEIA inventory, and a total monoterpene emission of 140 Tg(C) a<sup>-1</sup>, slightly more than the 127 Tg(C) a<sup>-1</sup> in the GEIA inventory. Figure 6.4 shows the ratio of BVOC emissions in the GEIA inventory to those generated by the CLM. Monoterpenes and isoprene show a similar spatial pattern in the relative magnitude of emission between the two datasets. At high northern latitudes, BVOC emissions generated by the CLM (of monoterpenes in particular) during the summertime are more than a factor of 2 lower than those taken from the GEIA inventory (Figure 6.4, *upper right*). Conversely, CLM emissions simulated for Central Africa and the Amazon are a factor of 2 higher than those in the GEIA inventory. This pattern is consistent with the findings of Guenther *et al.* (2012). The GEIA inventory was derived using the original Guenther *et al.* (1995) algorithms, which have been updated for use in MEGAN and combined with new land-cover data and different meteorology;

consequently, the reasons for the differences between the two datasets are not immediately clear.

To test the BVOC emissions generated using the CLM, the seasonal cycle in atmospheric monoterpene concentration at Hyytiälä, Finland  $(24^{\circ}17'E, 61^{\circ}51'N)$ , simulated by GLOMAP-mode using the CLM emissions was compared to that simulated using the GEIA inventory (see Section 2.1.2.2), and the observations of Lappalainen *et al.* (2009) and Hakola *et al.* (2012). As shown in Figure 6.5, using the CLM emissions results in an underestimation of the summertime peak in monoterpene concentration observed at Hyytiälä, which is better captured when the GEIA inventory is used.

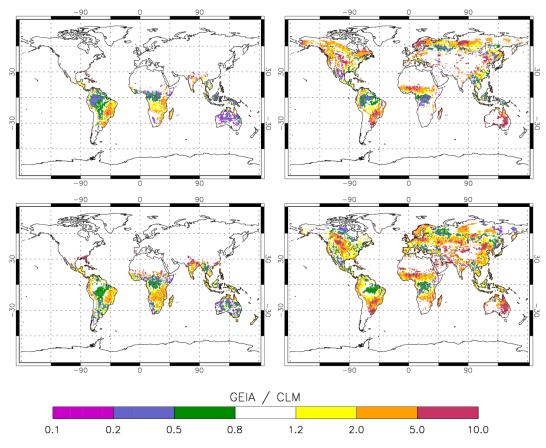


Figure 6.4: Emission ratio (GEIA ÷ CLM) for total monoterpenes (upper) and isoprene (lower) during January (left) and July (right).

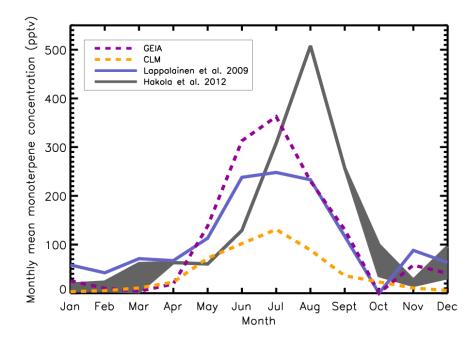


Figure 6.5: Monthly mean monoterpene concentrations; observed (grey; in 2011 by Hakola *et al.* (2012), blue: in 2006-7 by Lappalainen *et al.* (2009)) and simulated by GLOMAP-mode using the GEIA emission inventory (purple dotted) and emissions generated by the CLM (orange dotted).

#### 6.2.2 Changes to GLOMAP-mode Model Setup

The simulations in this chapter use the Org1 new particle formation scheme (Eqn. 3.2). In the standard configuration of GLOMAP-mode, one gas-phase tracer is used to represent the oxidation products of monoterpenes and isoprene. Consequently, for the simulations that included organically-mediated nucleation in *Chapter 3* (e.g.,  $Org1_m$ ), only monoterpene emissions were included to prevent the oxidation products of isoprene contributing to new particle formation (see Sections 1.2.4.4 and 3.2.2). Here, an additional gas-phase tracer is added to GLOMAP-mode so that the products of monoterpene and isoprene oxidation may be tracked independently. The product of monoterpene oxidation contributes to both new particle formation and condensational growth, whilst the product of isoprene oxidation contributes only to condensational growth. The new model configuration ( $Org1_mi$ ) was tested using the original GEIA inventory of BVOC emissions; simulated N<sub>80</sub> concentrations were compared to multi-annual observations at Hyytiälä and the original  $Org1_m$  configuration used in *Chapter 3* (Figure 6.6). The Pearson correlation coefficient, *R*, is virtually unchanged (0.62 with the  $Org1_mi$  configuration, as compared to 0.61 using  $Org1_m$  (Section 3.4.1)).

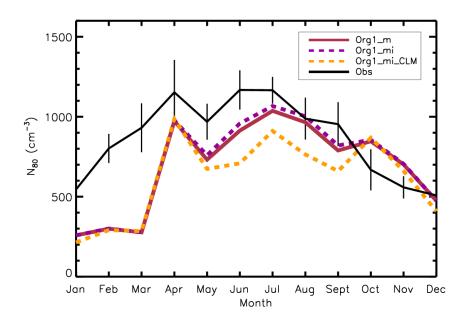


Figure 6.6: Multi-annual monthly mean observed (black line) and simulated (*Org1\_m* (red), *Org1\_mi* (purple dashed) and *Org1\_mi\_CLM* (orange dashed)) seasonal cycle in N<sub>80</sub> concentration at Hyytiälä.

When the  $Org1_mi$  configuration is combined with BVOC emissions generated by the CLM ( $Org_mi_CLM$ ), *R* at Hyytiälä is reduced to 0.55, mainly due to a decrease in N<sub>80</sub> concentrations between May and September (Figure 6.6). This suggests that, at Hyytiälä at least, GLOMAP does not generate an appropriate amount of SOA when BVOC emissions from the CLM are used; however, uncertainties in the formation processes of SOA prevent any conclusive statement.

For the experiments performed here, the emissions generated by the CLM and MEGANv2.1 are retained in order to be consistent with the land-use changes being examined, however, the differences between the GEIA and CLM/MEGANv2.1 datasets warrant further investigation.

#### 6.2.3 Deforestation Experiments

To quantify the radiative impact of a reduction in biogenic SOA due to deforestation, several idealised deforestation simulations were performed with the CLM. A control simulation was performed in which no modifications were made to the distribution of PFTs. For each deforestation scenario, the forested fraction of each grid cell in the deforested region was replaced with a relevant grass PFT (detailed in Table 6.1), according to the regions shown in Figure 6.7, i.e. global (90°N – 90°S), boreal (90°N – 50°N), temperate (50°N – 20°N and 20°S – 50°N) and tropical (20°N – 20°S). To avoid scaling up potentially inaccurate LAIs, derived from satellite observations of a small initial area of PFT, the LAIs for the grass PFTs (used to replace trees) were updated with the relevant latitudinal averages.

The CLM was used to generate emissions of monoterpenes (speciated emissions are combined) and isoprene for each deforestation scenario, following the 40-year spin-up period, after which soil moisture and BVOC emission levels were seen to stabilise to constant values. The BVOC emissions were then passed to GLOMAP-mode in order to simulate the perturbed aerosol distribution.

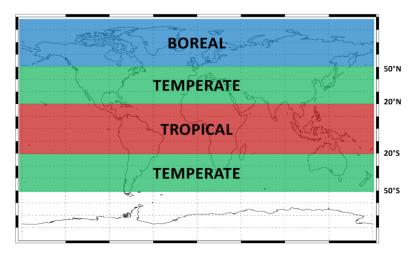


Figure 6.7: Regions over which forest is replaced in each deforestation experiment.

The dry deposition of aerosol is affected by land surface-type, with deposition velocities  $(Vel_d)$  generally higher over trees than grass (e.g., Zhang *et al.* 2001; Petroff *et al.* 2008a). The representation of dry deposition in GLOMAP is described in Section 2.1.4.6, where the surface roughness length  $(z_0)$ , and collection efficiencies (Brownian diffusion;  $E_b$ , impaction;  $E_{im}$  and interception;  $E_{in}$ ) are dependent upon surface type. Across the deforested region, the surface characteristics are modified from those of trees to grass (Table 6.2) according to Zhang *et al.* (2001).

ForestGrassRoughness length ( $z_0$ )0.1 - 3 m0.1 m

5 mm

2 mm

Table 6.2: Surface type characteristics used in GLOMAP-mode for forest and grass.

The standard wildfire emissions (Section 2.1.3) are maintained in the deforested regions, to represent fires potentially required to maintain an absence of forest on what would be naturally forested land.

#### 6.2.3.1 Radiative Effects of Deforestation

Characteristic radius (A)

To estimate the radiative impacts described in Figure 6.1, several calculations were performed using the E-S offline radiative transfer model.

Firstly, changes to CDNC (calculated offline from GLOMAP-mode output) associated with the deforestation scenarios were determined, as described in *Chapter 4*, and the E-S model was used to evaluate the first AIE resulting from the perturbation to cloud droplet effective radii. The cloud fraction fields (taken from ISCCP for the year 2000) were held constant between simulations.

Secondly, monthly mean surface shortwave albedos were calculated for each deforestation scenario as the ratio of the amount of shortwave radiation reflected by

 $(SW_R)$  and incident upon  $(SW_I)$  each grid cell, as calculated by the CLM. In the CLM, LAIs are adjusted for burial by snow, according to snow depth and vegetation height, which in turn affects  $SW_R$ . The E-S offline radiative transfer model was then used to evaluate the radiative impact of the change in albedo between the various scenarios by comparing the net (SW+LW) top-of-atmosphere flux.

Lastly, the E-S model was used to estimate the radiative impact of changes to CO<sub>2</sub> concentration associated with deforestation. A coupled climate carbon-cycle model would be required to comprehensively evaluate the impact of deforestation on atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration. In its absence, changes to CO<sub>2</sub> concentration were obtained from Bala et al. (2007) in which an integrated carbon-climate model is used to assess various impacts of simulated forest removal in the year 2000. When forests are replaced by grass in these simulations, the carbon they stored is gradually added to the litter pool. The simulations proceed for 100 years following deforestation, allowing the carbon released (a total of 818 Pg(C) over 100 years) to partition amongst the atmosphere, ocean and land carbon sinks. Table 6.3 details the atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration for each deforestation scenario; the regional boundaries are the same as Figure 6.7. Anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions follow the SRES A2 scenario from 2000 to 2100 (Nakicenovic et al. 2000), resulting in a control CO<sub>2</sub> concentration of 732 ppm in 2100. The E-S model was then used to evaluate the radiative impact of the change in  $CO_2$ concentration, between each deforestation scenario and the control scenario, by comparing the net (SW+LW) fluxes at the tropopause, and correcting for stratospheric temperature re-adjustment according to Myhre et al. (1998), by revising the calculated values downward by 15%.

Simulation	CO <sub>2</sub> concentration in 2100 (ppm)		
Control	732		
Global deforestation	1113		
Boreal deforestation	737		
Temperate deforestation	842		
Tropical deforestation	1031		

Table 6.3: Atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations after simulated deforestation; taken from Bala et al. 2007.

Finally, the combined radiative effect was evaluated by modifying the surface albedo,  $CO_2$  concentration and cloud droplet effective radius simultaneously, for each deforestation scenario, in the E-S model.

These simulations do not account for changes in evapotranspiration following deforestation, which would likely decrease, resulting in a positive radiative effect. Nor do they account for the potential interaction of the radiative effects examined.

# 6.3 Results

Table 6.4 reports global BVOC emission totals, and amount of SOA generated, for the control simulation and each regional deforestation scenario. Globally replacing forests with grass reduces the global total isoprene emission by approximately 87%, to 60 Tg(C)  $a^{-1}$ , and the global total monoterpene emission by approximately 94% to 8 Tg(C)  $a^{-1}$ . As a result, simulated SOA production is reduced by 91%.

Most of this reduction in emission is due to the removal of trees at tropical latitudes  $(20^{\circ}N - 20^{\circ}S)$ , which reduces the isoprene and monoterpene emission totals by 72% and 74% respectively. Despite the large areas of forests north of 50°N, simulated boreal deforestation reduces global isoprene and monoterpene emissions by only 1% and 5% respectively. However, as shown in Section 6.1.2.1, the CLM may be underestimating high latitude monoterpene emissions.

	Global annual total					
	Isoprene emission (Tg(C) a <sup>-1</sup> )		<b>Total monoterpene</b> emission (Tg(C) a <sup>-1</sup> )		<b>SOA generated</b> (Tg(SOA) a <sup>-1</sup> )	
	and % cha	nge from	and % change from		and % change from	
	cont	rol	control		control	
Control	480		140		35.6	
Global	60	-87%	8	-94%	3.1	-91%
deforestation						
Boreal deforestation	475	-1%	133	-5%	34.4	-3%
Temperate deforestation	412	-14%	119	-15%	30.1	-15%
Tropical deforestation	133	-72%	36	-74%	9.7	-73%

Table 6.4: BVOC emissions and amount of SOA generated during deforestation experiments.

#### 6.3.1 First Aerosol Indirect Effect

Table 6.5 reports the change to global annual mean CDNC for each deforestation scenario, when compared to the control simulation. Global deforestation, which leaves only 3 Tg(SOA)  $a^{-1}$ , reduces the global annual mean CDNC by 7.6%. This reduction in CDNC yields a global annual mean first AIE of +0.26 W m<sup>-2</sup> with the spatial pattern shown in Figure 6.8 (*upper left*).

	% change to global annual mean CDNC	<b>AIE</b> (W m <sup>-2</sup> )	<b>ΔSOA</b> (Tg(SOA))	AIE per change in SOA [AIE/ΔSOA] (W m <sup>-2</sup> Tg(SOA) <sup>-1</sup> )
Global deforestation	-7.6	+0.26	32.5	0.79 x 10 <sup>-2</sup>
Boreal deforestation	-1.4	+0.02	1.2	1.49 x 10 <sup>-2</sup>
Temperate deforestation	-2.7	+0.09	5.5	1.68 x 10 <sup>-2</sup>
Tropical deforestation	-2.5	+0.12	25.8	0.47 x 10 <sup>-2</sup>

Table 6.5: Summary of results from deforestation scenarios.

For a number of reasons, the positive first AIE for global deforestation is smaller in magnitude than the equivalent negative AIE calculated for monoterpene SOA in *Chapter*  $4 (Org1_m; -0.77 \text{ W m}^{-2})$ . Firstly, since the source of organic oxidation products is not completely removed when forests are replaced with grass, nucleation is not completely suppressed, as it was in the absence of biogenic SOA in *Chapters 3* and 4. Secondly, the BVOC emissions generated by the CLM are lower than those from the GEIA inventory in some of the more pristine regions (e.g., high northern latitudes, Australia and the south-east coast of South America) that were important for the first AIE simulated in *Chapter 4*.

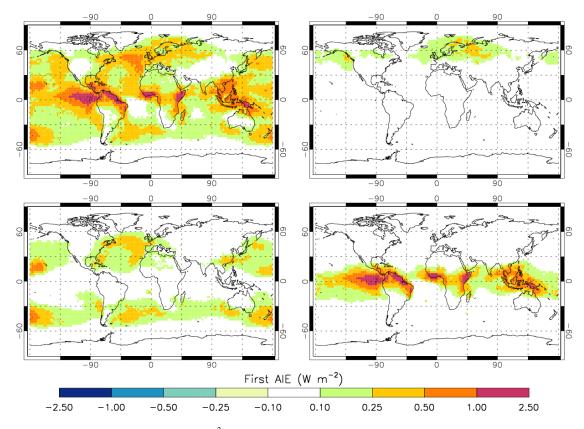


Figure 6.8: Annual mean first AIE (W m<sup>-2</sup>) resulting from reduction in SOA due to replacement of global (upper left), boreal (upper right), temperate (lower left) and tropical (lower right) forests with grass.

Tropical deforestation generates the largest AIE (+0.12 W m<sup>-2</sup>) of the individual regions due to substantial year-round decreases in CDNC (up to 50%) and the abundance of low-level clouds over tropical regions. The first AIE calculated due to tropical deforestation will be sensitive to the assumptions made regarding wildfire and biomass burning emissions, since these hydrophobic particles may be *physically aged* by SOA and subsequently act as CCN. Here, the standard GFED emission set for biomass burning is retained, but a more realistic scenario could include gradual deforestation (i.e., gradual reduction in the production of biogenic SOA) and shifting patterns of deforestation fire emissions.

Temperate deforestation gives the largest AIE per change in SOA ( $1.68 \times 10^{-2} \text{ W m}^{-2} \text{ Tg}(\text{SOA})^{-1}$ ). This occurs because the removal of biogenic SOA in temperate regions affects CDNC across the remote northern hemisphere (NH) and southern hemisphere (SH) ocean regions, with the influence of the change spreading into regions of very high cloud fraction (Figure 6.8, *lower left*).

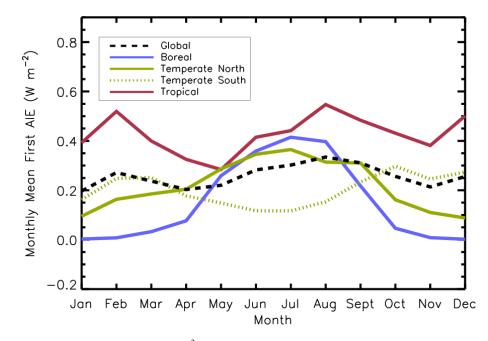


Figure 6.9: Monthly-mean first AIE (W m<sup>-2</sup>), over the boreal (blue), NH temperate (full green), SH temperate (green dotted line) and tropical (red) regions, during the global deforestation simulation.

Boreal deforestation reduces the global annual mean CDNC by only 1.4%, but regional reductions over northern Russia and Canada, evident in the first AIE (Figure 6.8, *upper right*), in the NH summertime exceed 35%. Figure 6.9 shows the seasonal cycle in regional mean AIE over each deforested region, highlighting the summertime peak in first AIE of approximately +0.4 W m<sup>-2</sup> over the boreal region. Regionally, the combined contribution of temperate and boreal deforestation leads to a summertime (JJA mean) local first AIE between +0.3 W m<sup>-2</sup> and +1.5 W m<sup>-2</sup> across much of the region between 40 and 80°N (Figure 6.10).

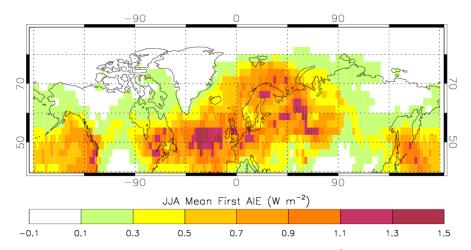


Figure 6.10: NH summertime (June-July-August) mean first AIE (W m<sup>-2</sup>) due to global deforestation.

#### 6.3.2 Other Radiative Effects of Forests

To assess the relative importance of the calculated first AIE from deforestation, the radiative effects (RE) of changes to surface albedo and atmospheric  $CO_2$  concentration were also calculated. Table 6.6 reports the global annual mean REs for each deforestation scenario.

The global annul mean RE due to surface albedo change (-0.96 W m<sup>-2</sup>) is dominated by boreal deforestation, which alone exerts a global annual mean RE of -0.51 W m<sup>-2</sup>. Over Canada and Russia, the increase in surface albedo, and enhanced snow cover, due to deforestation leads to regional REs up to -25 W m<sup>-2</sup> (Figure 6.11, *left*), consistent with Betts (2000). Snow cover and the level of incident solar radiation combine to give a peak RE from surface albedo change during March and April (Figure 6.12) over the boreal region.

atmospheric $CO_2$ concentration (adjusted) associated with each deforestation scenario.							
	Global annual mean radiative effects						
	AIE	<b>RE due to RE due to</b>		<b>RE due to Aalbedo</b>	Total		
	<b>AIE</b> (W m <sup>-2</sup> )	∆albedo	$\Delta [CO_2]^a$	plus $\Delta[CO_2]^b$	RE <sup>b</sup>		
		$(W m^{-2})$	(W m <sup>-2</sup> )	(W m <sup>-2</sup> )	$(W m^{-2})$		
Global	+0.26	- 0.96	+ 2.20	+ 1.24	+ 1.50		
deforestation							
Boreal	+0.02	- 0.51	+ 0.03	- 0.48	- 0.46		
deforestation	10.02	- 0.51	1 0.05	0.40	0.40		
Temperate	+0.09	- 0.27	+ 0.75	+ 0.48	+ 0.57		
deforestation	+0.09						
Tropical	+0.12	- 0.18	+ 1.80	+ 1.62	+ 1.74		
deforestation	±0.12	- 0.10	T 1.00	+ 1.02	+ 1.74		

Table 6.6: Summary of global annual mean radiative effects due to change in BVOC emission, surface albedo and atmospheric  $CO_2$  concentration (adjusted) associated with each deforestation scenario.

<sup>a</sup> Based on CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations 100 years after deforestation from Bala *et al.* (2007; Table 6.3) and revised downwards by 15% to account for stratospheric temperature readjustment, following Myhre *et al.* (1998). <sup>b</sup> Sum of radiative effects when radiative transfer model run individually for each perturbation.

The radiative effect from CO<sub>2</sub> (Figure 6.11, *right*) follows a logarithmic relationship with the ratio of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration in the deforestation scenario to that in the control. In Bala *et al.* (2007), global deforestation increases the atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration by 381 ppm after 100 years (Table 6.3), giving an RE of +2.20 W m<sup>-2</sup>. In reality, the radiative effect from CO<sub>2</sub> would be sensitive to the mode of deforestation, the fate of the carbon stored by the trees and the timescale over which it is released.

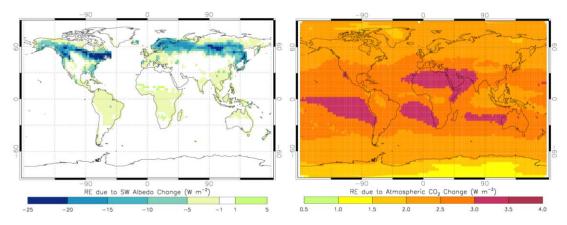


Figure 6.11: Annual mean radiative effect of change in surface albedo (left) and atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration (non-adjusted values; right) due to simulated global deforestation.

The radiative effects combine linearly (tested using the non-adjusted  $CO_2$  RE values but not shown here), providing similar values when the radiative transfer model is run with separate perturbations to cloud droplet effective radii, surface albedo and  $CO_2$ concentration, and when the individual radiative effects are summed. In the absence of the first AIE, the additive RE from the change to  $CO_2$  concentration and surface albedo due to global deforestation would be +1.24 W m<sup>-2</sup>; this is increased by 21% to +1.50 W m<sup>-2</sup> when the first AIE is included (Table 6.6).

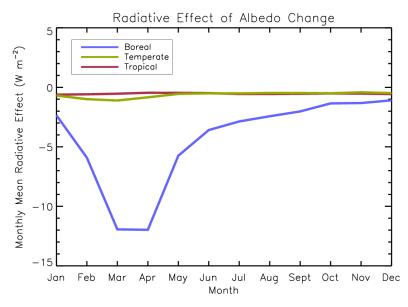


Figure 6.12: Seasonal cycle in regional mean RE due to surface albedo change only.

In order to make a first estimate of the potential first AIE due to forest removal, these experiments make several assumptions. Firstly, a new particle formation rate that is dependent on the presence of biogenic organic compounds is used in GLOMAP-mode; an approach which is supported by results in *Chapter 3*. Secondly, the removal of all forests in one instance is not intended to represent a realistic course of events, but to allow an estimation of the radiative implications of an absence of forests. Accordingly, the radiative effects of actual deforestation could be different, i.e., a gradual reduction in SOA production, combined with increased forest fire emissions. Additionally, these experiments do not include the impact of changes to evapotranspiration, a reduction in which (due to forest removal) would likely contribute an additional warming (e.g., Bala

*et al.* 2007; Davin and de Noblet-Ducoudré 2010). This would require a coupled hydrological cycle which is beyond the scope of the study presented here, but an avenue for further investigation.

### 6.4 Summary and Conclusions

In this chapter, a land-surface model, aerosol microphysics model, and radiative transfer model were combined (offline) to assess the climatic impact of the idealised deforestation of various regions.

The first AIE due to a reduction in SOA production associated with deforestation has been estimated for the first time. Globally, the first AIE due to the replacement of forests with grass (+0.26 W m<sup>-2</sup>) increases the positive radiative effect (net effect from increased  $CO_2$  concentration and surface albedo) of deforestation by 21%, suggesting that present-day deforestation may be warming the climate more than previously thought. In further work, this model framework will be used to assess the impact of historical deforestation, i.e., in a pre-industrial atmosphere.

Of the three regional deforestation scenarios examined, tropical deforestation resulted in the largest absolute first AIE (+0.12 W m<sup>-2</sup>), increasing the net effect by 7%. Since the AIE is strongest in the tropics, the latitudinal (i.e., from 0° to 90°N) gradient in the total radiative effect from forest removal is increased. The first AIE calculated for tropical deforestation will be particularly sensitive to the assumptions made regarding wildfire and deforestation fire emissions. In order to calculate a more realistic first AIE for tropical deforestation, this approach could be improved by gradually reducing the forested area (i.e., when calculating the changing BVOC emission), and simultaneously increasing emissions from deforestation fires (used in GLOMAP-mode), over a series of simulations. Previous studies suggested that the strength of the albedo effect gives simulated boreal deforestation an overall cooling effect (e.g., Bala *et al.* 2007; Davin and de Noblet-Ducoudré 2010). The present analysis does not change that conclusion, however, the first AIE for boreal deforestation (+0.02 W m<sup>-2</sup>) calculated here may be an underestimate if the BVOC emissions generated by the CLM are too low at high northern latitudes.

Deforestation in temperate regions was found to give the largest first AIE per change in SOA, increasing the combined RE by 19%. Snyder *et al.* (2004) found that the temperature change induced by NH temperate deforestation was seasonally dependent, with a simulated warming between June and November, but a cooling between December and May. The present analysis suggests that inclusion of the first AIE due to reduced SOA production would enhance this summertime warming (Figure 6.10), and by imposing an additional positive RE may increase the fraction of the year for which NH temperate deforestation would induce a warming (Figure 6.9).

Most present-day afforestation is occurring in temperate regions; the present analysis suggests that this may have been exerting more of a cooling effect on the climate than would have been attributed to  $CO_2$  sequestration alone. Further work will explore the potential negative RE from increasing forest cover in particular temperate regions (e.g., China), incorporating species-specific BVOC emissions.

The first AIE calculated in this chapter will be sensitive to the assumptions made when calculating the impact of reduced biogenic SOA on particle concentrations, in particular whether or not BVOC oxidation products are involved in the initial stages of new particle formation. It was shown in *Chapter 3* that this is likely to be the case, however our understanding of the mechanisms that drive new particle formation in the atmosphere remains incomplete; subsequent estimates of this effect will therefore be sensitive to any further insights into this process.

# **Chapter 7: Conclusions, Implications and Further Work**

#### 7.1 Summary of Results

This thesis has explored the role of biogenic secondary organic aerosol (SOA) in the present-day, and pre-industrial, atmosphere. *Chapters 3* to 5 examined the behaviour of SOA, and the radiative impact of its presence, whilst *Chapter 6* focussed on the climatic significance of forest-derived SOA.

In *Chapter 3*, a global aerosol microphysics model (GLOMAP-mode) was used to quantify changes to total particle (greater than 3 nm dry diameter;  $N_3$ ) and cloud condensation nuclei (CCN) number concentration. It was shown that the impact of biogenic SOA on the aerosol distribution is complex, and sensitive to many uncertain parameters and processes.

The effect of biogenic SOA on  $N_3$  concentration is dependent upon the mechanism used to simulate new particle formation. In the absence of organically-mediated new particle formation, the global annual mean  $N_3$  concentration decreases in the presence of biogenic SOA (by as much as 17.5%), due to the enhanced condensation and coagulational sinks. If organically-mediated new particle formation is included, the global annual mean  $N_3$  increases by as much as 142%.

The seasonal cycle in total particle concentration (varying between  $N_3$  to  $N_{14}$ ), across sites in the continental northern hemisphere was best captured when organicallymediated new particle formation was included in the model (Section 3.4.2). Introducing a dependency on biogenic species increases summertime total particle concentrations, relative to wintertime, and improves the correlation coefficient from 0.23 when new particle formation is dependent only on the concentration of sulphuric acid, to 0.40 when the new particle formation rate derived in the CLOUD chamber is used.

The inclusion of biogenic SOA also improved the simulated seasonal cycle in  $N_{80}$  (particles greater than 80 nm dry diameter) and reduced the model bias when compared against CCN observations (Section 3.4). The presence of biogenic SOA increased the simulated global annual mean CCN concentration by between 3.6% (when organic oxidation products are not able to physically age non-hydrophilic particles) and 45.2% (when organic oxidation products contribute to new particle formation). In the absence of organically-mediated new particle formation, most of the increase in CCN concentration occurs due to the physical ageing of initially non-hydrophilic particles, e.g., from wildfires. However, when monoterpene oxidation products directly affect the rate of new particle formation, CCN concentrations are strongly perturbed by the growth of newly formed particles to a CCN-active size.

The improved representation of the seasonal cycle, in both total particle concentrations and  $N_{80}$ , when organically-mediated new particle formation is included in GLOMAPmode, strongly suggests a role for a biogenic control on new particle formation. Accordingly, the sensitivity of CCN concentrations to the presence of biogenic SOA is high. In *Chapter 4*, the radiative effects (REs) of the changes to particle number, size, and composition quantified in *Chapter 3*, were evaluated. It was shown that biogenic SOA very likely has a negative radiative effect in the present-day atmosphere, via both the *direct* and first *indirect* effect. The *direct* radiative effect from SOA was shown to be most sensitive to the amount of SOA produced in the simulation, varying from -0.09 W  $m^{-2}$  for a source of 18.5 Tg(SOA) a<sup>-1</sup>, to -0.78 W m<sup>-2</sup> for a source of 185 Tg(SOA) a<sup>-1</sup>. An accurate assessment of the direct effect from SOA will require a refinement of the current wide range in estimates of the global SOA budget. The first aerosol *indirect* effect (AIE) due to biogenic SOA was shown to be very sensitive to the mechanism used to simulate new particle formation, ranging from -0.05 W m<sup>-2</sup> for a simulation including only binary homogenous nucleation (i.e., little new particle formation in the boundary layer) to -0.77 W m<sup>-2</sup> for a simulation including organically-mediated new particle formation. At high northern latitudes, monoterpene emissions from boreal forests result in regional summertime AIEs of up to -5 W m<sup>-2</sup> over land, and -8 W m<sup>-2</sup> over the adjacent ocean regions.

The first *indirect radiative forcing* (RF) of anthropogenic emissions, since 1750, was found to be sensitive to the assumptions made concerning biogenic SOA (Section 4.4). The RF changes by 0.06 W m<sup>-2</sup> when the SOA production yield is varied by a factor of 10 and by 0.12 W m<sup>-2</sup> when the approach to modelling new particle formation (and the involvement of biogenic oxidation products) is changed. This highlights, as previously demonstrated by Schmidt *et al.* (2012) for volcanic eruptions, that in order to understand the radiative effects of human activities, a comprehensive understanding of the background atmospheric state in pre-industrial times is required.

In *Chapter 5* it was shown that the first AIE calculated from biogenic SOA is sensitive to the model treatment of SOA volatility. Whilst the first stage oxidation products of many BVOCs are semi-volatile, their continued oxidation in the gas- or particle-phase reduces their volatility further still and may provide a supply of very low volatility compounds to

the particle-phase. Two different, but commonly implemented approaches to the partitioning of SOA amongst the existing particle distribution were examined. The first, a *kinetic* approach, distributes the SOA across the existing size distribution according to particle surface area. The second, a *thermodynamic* approach, distributes the SOA according to the existing organic mass. This thermodynamic approach suppresses the growth of newly formed particles, removing this as a source of CCN. To capture the observed growth of newly formed particles, the kinetic approach is required – however, this neglects the potential re-evaporation of semi-volatile organics, back into the gas-phase.

Accurately simulating the condensation of SOA onto the existing aerosol size distribution is important when evaluating processes that depend strongly on changes to ultrafine particle number, such as the AIE. In *Chapter 5* it was shown that the first AIE from biogenic SOA is negative if the kinetic approach is taken, but positive, or negligible, if the thermodynamic approach is taken. The next step would be to combine the two approaches, with a fraction of the SOA assigned a very low volatility (theoretically, since the volatility is not actually assigned in the model) and partitioning via the kinetic route, and a fraction of the SOA assigned a moderate volatility and partitioning via the thermodynamic route. The current literature offers little constraint on the values these two fractions should take. However, since gas- and particle-phase processing tends to shift organic compounds to lower volatility (e.g., Jimenez *et al.* 2009; Donahue *et al.* 2011), one could assume that the fraction of lower volatility material should be the larger of the two.

In *Chapter 6*, the radiative effect of forest derived SOA in the present-day atmosphere was explored using several idealised deforestation scenarios. It was shown that including the first AIE due to reduced biogenic SOA production (+0.26 W m<sup>-2</sup>) increased the positive radiative effect from global deforestation (i.e., the net change from increased  $CO_2$  concentration and increased surface albedo) by 21%. The magnitude of the AIE due

to biogenic SOA is strongest for total tropical deforestation ( $+0.12 \text{ W m}^{-2}$ ), but the largest AIE per change in SOA was found for temperate deforestation, due to modest but widespread decreases in cloud droplet number concentration in regions of high cloud fraction.

Pongratz *et al.* (2011) have previously estimated a RF of +0.15 W m<sup>-2</sup> due to historical (AD 800 to 1992) land-use change (-0.2 W m<sup>-2</sup> from surface albedo changes and +0.35 W m<sup>-2</sup> from CO<sub>2</sub> emission); results from *Chapter 6* suggest that historical deforestation may have warmed the climate more than previously thought. Further work will examine the significance of the first AIE due to historical land-use change, using the dataset of Pongratz *et al.* (2011).

Over the past decade, the rate of tropical deforestation has decreased, and the rate of temperate afforestation has increased (Section 1.2.1). Results from *Chapter 6* would suggest that the first AIE due to changes in biogenic SOA over that time would be negative, relative to the immediately preceding period (e.g. 1960s-1990s) with high levels of tropical deforestation (i.e., that the total RF due to land-use change would be less positive than previously). If sufficiently large, this could have contributed to the observed hiatus in temperature increase observed over the last decade (Morice *et al.* 2012). A further study to accurately quantify the radiative effects from recent levels of deforestation and afforestation is therefore warranted, building on the framework established in *Chapter 6*.

#### 7.1.1 Implications for Understanding and Mitigating Future Climate Change

In order to limit equilibrium climate warming to 2 K (Section 1.3.2), the net RF resulting from anthropogenic activities would need to be restricted to between +2.5 W m<sup>-2</sup> and +3.9 W m<sup>-2</sup> (assuming an *equilibrium climate sensitivity* of between 1.9 K (Otto *et al.* 2013) and 3 K (Meehl *et al.* 2007)). This calculation is based on the equilibrium

temperature change, whereas the transient climate changes experienced will be sensitive to the temporal and spatial nature of forcing agents. As highlighted by Ramanathan and Xu (2010), the current RF from greenhouse gas levels (approximately 3 W m<sup>-2</sup>; Figure 1.10) is being masked by a very uncertain negative aerosol RF which may decrease under policies designed to improve air quality.

As shown in *Chapter 4*, the calculated anthropogenic indirect RF (and therefore the total RF due to anthropogenic activities) is sensitive to the representation of the natural "background" state of the atmosphere, to which SOA is a significant contributor. If anthropogenic sources of aerosol reduce in the future, our understanding of the behaviour of natural components of the atmosphere will become increasingly important.

Quantifying the current global budget of biogenic SOA, and understanding how this may change in the future, should therefore be a priority for the research community. This will require an improved understanding of the behaviour of biogenic SOA, even in the present-day atmosphere. Whilst including a biogenic control on the rate of new particle formation represents a substantial improvement in our ability to model the seasonal cycle in particle number concentrations, our understanding of the process of new particle formation and growth is not complete. It is likely that different types of organic compounds are responsible for different aspects of the role of SOA in the atmosphere, e.g., formation of the initial cluster, growth of the initial clusters to an observable size, and growth of observable particles to a climatically relevant size. For example, Häkkinen et al. (2013) found that the measured growth rate of 7 - 20 nm diameter particles showed a clear peak in the NH summertime, suggesting a biogenic control. Conversely, the observed growth rate of sub-3 nm particles did not show a seasonal cycle, suggesting that this was not driven by biogenic organic compounds, but potentially anthropogenic organic compounds, or even amines (e.g., Kirkby et al. 2011; Kulmala et al. 2013); although the determination of growth rates below 3 nm is subject to large errors (e.g., Yli-Juuti et al. 2011). Accurately representing the spatial and temporal variations in the

formation and growth rates of new particles will therefore require an improved understanding of the compounds that contribute at each stage.

In the future, sources of biogenic SOA will change. Emissions of BVOCs will be sensitive to changes in temperature (e.g., Monson *et al.* 1992; Lathière *et al.* 2005; Tunved *et al.* 2008; Paasonen *et al.* 2013) and carbon dioxide concentrations (Rosenstiel *et al.* 2003; Arneth *et al.* 2007; Pacifico *et al.* 2012). The spatial distribution of BVOC emissions will also change, both through shifting land-use practises, e.g., deforestation and afforestation, biofuel growth (e.g., Ashworth *et al.* 2013; Hardacre *et al.* 2013) and vegetation management (e.g., logging; Haapanala *et al.* 2012), and through climate induced changes, e.g. a northwards shift of vegetation in warming climate (e.g., Harsch *et al.* 2009), savannisation in the tropics (e.g., Zeng *et al.* 2013), or enhanced levels of beetle infestation (Berg *et al.* 2013). It was shown in *Chapters 3* and *4* that the location of emissions is important, as well as their magnitude, with emissions into relatively pristine locations able to exert a more substantial indirect radiative effect.

Reducing deforestation, and increasing afforestation, has been suggested as part of a strategy to mitigate potential future climate change (Section 1.3.2.1). Results from *Chapter 6* suggest that deforestation, particularly in the tropics, is causing more of a positive radiative effect than previously thought and a reduction in deforestation rates should therefore be seen as a priority. One possibility to help achieve this would be the inclusion of non-carbon effects in the metrics used to assess the importance of land-use changes. In schemes such as REDD, the preservation of carbon stored on the land is considered, but it will be necessary to take the other effects of forests into consideration, e.g., their effects on rainfall (Spracklen *et al.* 2012) and the radiative effects explored in this thesis, to accurately assess the impacts of forests on the climate.

## 7.2 Further Work

Several avenues for further work have been discussed in the previous sections. Important questions to be answered are summarised briefly below, and some potential modifications to the GLOMAP-mode model are described in the following section.

- How significant is the reduction in biogenic SOA, and the associated radiative effects, attributable to historical deforestation. This could be answered using the land-use change data collated by Pongratz *et al.* (2011) to generate BVOC emission fields (potentially using the Community Land Model) for various years (e.g., 1750, 1850, 1950, 2000), under changing climatic conditions. The impact of reduced biogenic SOA could then be quantified using GLOMAP-mode, by including anthropogenic emissions for the appropriate year.
- What is the first AIE associated with current levels of tropical deforestation, i.e., a loss of approximately 13 million hectares per year between 2000 and 2010 (FAO 2010), and what are the implications of deforestation continuing at this level?
- How significant could temperate afforestation be in terms of climate change mitigation, is the negative first AIE associated with expansion of temperate forests significant? This could be answered using the framework developed in *Chapter 6* by replacing grass and crop plant functional types with trees across the temperate northern hemisphere, and generating BVOC emissions using the Community Land Model, taking into consideration the particular species being planted.

#### 7.2.1 Secondary Organic Aerosol in GLOMAP

The representation of SOA in GLOMAP is necessarily simple. Section 7.1 discussed the possibility of adding additional tracers to the model to reflect the range of volatilities present amongst organic oxidation products. Further to this, the behaviour of the oxidation products of compounds from the same class may even be quite different; the oxidation products of exocyclic structures (i.e., double bond outside the ring, e.g.,  $\beta$ -pinene) tend to retain their ring structure, whilst the oxidation of endocyclic structures (i.e., double bond inside the ring, e.g.,  $\alpha$ -pinene) gives ring-opened products, yielding two classes of compounds with potentially differing behaviours in the atmosphere (Bonn and Moorgat 2002; Bonn *et al.* 2002). This may be important in locations where vegetation emissions are dominated by particular compounds, for all or part of the year. Accurate speciated emissions and atmospherically relevant yields for SOA production from individual compounds would be required to improve the model in this respect, which may be possible in the future.

This thesis has not examined the role of sesquiterpenes. Whilst the estimated annual emission of sesquiterpenes ( $<30 \text{ Tg}(\text{C}) \text{ a}^{-1}$ ; Guenther *et al.* 2012) is far lower than either isoprene or monoterpenes, very high yields have been observed in the laboratory for SOA produced from sesquiterpene ozonolysis (e.g., Ng *et al.* 2007). Accordingly, their future inclusion in global models, potentially using emissions generated by MEGANv2.1, may be important.

#### 7.2.2 Dry Deposition in GLOMAP

The representation of dry deposition in GLOMAP is relatively sophisticated, however, the categories into which the land-surface is split are limited and surface characteristics are held constant throughout the year. The current parameterisation could be updated using the approach of Petroff *et al.* (2008b; 2009) and Petroff and Zhang (2010) to

further distinguish between broadleaf and needleleaf, evergreen and deciduous trees, and add a seasonal dependence for the surface characteristics (e.g., roughness length and collection radius).

#### 7.2.3 Tropospheric Chemistry

As well as affecting the particle-phase via the formation of SOA, BVOC emissions impact the concentrations of compounds in the gas-phase, e.g.,  $O_3$  (Hewitt *et al.* 2011). As such, changes to the level and distribution of BVOC emissions could affect the oxidative capacity of the atmosphere, and the lifetime of other climatically important gases, e.g., methane (e.g., Williams *et al.* 2013). The importance of these changes could be investigated using the coupled-chemistry version of GLOMAP-mode, described by Breider *et al.* (2010) and Schmidt *et al.* (2012).

Additionally, the application of a fixed yield for the production of SOA from BVOC oxidation does not allow for any dependency on the concentration of other atmospheric constituents (apart from the oxidants  $O_3$ , OH and  $NO_3$ ), e.g.,  $NO_x$ , which may be important, particularly for isoprene oxidation (Section 1.2.4.3; Kroll *et al.* 2006). An SOA production dependency on  $NO_x$  concentrations could be added to the coupled-chemistry version of the model.

# References

- Abdul-Razzak, H., *et al.* (1998). "A parameterization of aerosol activation: 1. Single aerosol type." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **103**(D6): 6123-6131.
- Adams, P. J. and J. H. Seinfeld (2002). "Predicting global aerosol size distributions in general circulation models." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **107**(D19): AAC 4-1-AAC 4-23.
- Amin, H. S., *et al.* (2013). "Monoterpene emissions from bark beetle infested Engelmann spruce trees." Atmospheric Environment, **72**(0): 130-133.
- Andreae, M. O., *et al.* (2004). "Smoking Rain Clouds over the Amazon." Science, **303**(5662): 1337-1342.
- Andres, R. J. and A. D. Kasgnoc (1998). "A time-averaged inventory of subaerial volcanic sulfur emissions." J. Geophys. Res., 103(D19): 25251-25261.
- Angelsen, A. and S. Wetrtz-Kanounnikoff (2008). "What are the key design issues for REDD and the criteria for assessing options?" in Moving Ahead with REDD. A. Angelsen, CIFOR. p11-22.
- Arey, J., *et al.* (1995). "Hydrocarbon emissions from natural vegetation in California's South Coast Air Basin." Atmospheric Environment, **29**(21): 2977-2988.
- Arneth, A., et al. (2007). "CO2 inhibition of global terrestrial isoprene emissions: Potential implications for atmospheric chemistry." Geophys. Res. Lett., 34(18): L18813.
- Arneth, A., et al. (2008). "Why are estimates of global terrestrial isoprene emissions so similar (and why is this not so for monoterpenes)?" Atmos. Chem. Phys., 8(16): 4605-4620.
- Arnold, S. R., *et al.* (2005). "A three-dimensional model study of the effect of new temperature-dependent quantum yields for acetone photolysis." J. Geophys. Res., 110(D22): D22305.
- Arora, V. K. and A. Montenegro (2011). "Small temperature benefits provided by realistic afforestation efforts." Nature Geoscience, 4(8): 514-518.
- Aschmann, S. M., *et al.* (1998). "Products of the gas phase reactions of the OH radical with  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$ -pinene in the presence of NO." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **103**(D19): 25553-25561.
- Ashworth, K., *et al.* (2013). "Impacts of biofuel cultivation on mortality and crop yields." Nature Clim. Change, **3**: 492-496.

- Atkinson, R. (1997). "Gas-Phase Tropospheric Chemistry of Volatile Organic Compounds: 1. Alkanes and Alkenes." J. Phys. Chem. Ref. Data, 26: 215-290.
- Atkinson, R. and J. Arey (2003). "Gas-phase tropospheric chemistry of biogenic volatile organic compounds: a review." Atmospheric Environment, 37(Supplement 2): 197-219.
- Atkinson, R., *et al.* (1984). "Kinetics of the gas-phase reactions of nitrate radicals with a series of dialkenes, cycloalkenes, and monoterpenes at 295 .+-. 1 K." Environmental Science & Technology, 18(5): 370-375.
- Atkinson, R., *et al.* (2006). "Evaluated kinetic and photochemical data for atmospheric chemistry: Volume II gas phase reactions of organic species." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 6(11): 3625-4055.
- Atkinson, R., et al. (1989). "Evaluated Kinetic and Photochemical Data for Atmospheric Chemistry: Supplement III. IUPAC Subcommittee on Gas Kinetic Data Evaluation for Atmospheric Chemistry " Journal of Physical and Chemical Reference Data, 18: 881-1097.
- Atkinson, R., *et al.* (1990). "Rate constants for the gas-phase reactions of O3 with a series of monoterpenes and related compounds at 296  $\pm$  2 K." International Journal of Chemical Kinetics, **22**(8): 871-887.
- Atkinson, R., *et al.* (1986). "Estimation of night-time N2O5 concentrations from ambient NO2 and NO3 radical concentrations and the role of N2O5 in night-time chemistry."
  Atmospheric Environment (1967), **20**(2): 331-339.
- Bala, G., et al. (2007). "Combined climate and carbon-cycle effects of large-scale deforestation." PNAS, 104(16): 6550-6555.
- Ball, S. M., *et al.* (1999). "Laboratory studies of particle nucleation: Initial results for H<sub>2</sub>SO<sub>4</sub>, H<sub>2</sub>O, and NH<sub>3</sub> vapors." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **104**(D19): 23709-23718.
- Barahona, D., *et al.* (2010). "Comprehensively accounting for the effect of giant CCN in cloud activation parameterizations." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **10**(5): 2467-2473.
- Barnes, I., *et al.* (1990). "Kinetics and products of the reactions of nitrate radical with monoalkenes, dialkenes, and monoterpenes." The Journal of Physical Chemistry, 94(6): 2413-2419.
- Bates, T. S., *et al.* (1992). "Sulfur emissions to the atmosphere from natural sources." Journal of Atmospheric Chemistry, **14**(1-4): 315-337.
- Bellouin, N., *et al.* (2005). "Global estimate of aerosol direct radiative forcing from satellite measurements." Nature, **438**(7071): 1138-1141.

- Bellouin, N., et al. (2008). "Updated estimate of aerosol direct radiative forcing from satellite observations and comparison against the Hadley Centre climate model." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **113**(D10): D10205.
- Bellouin, N., et al. (2013a). "Impact of the modal aerosol scheme GLOMAP-mode on aerosol forcing in the Hadley Centre Global Environmental Model." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 13(6): 3027-3044.
- Bellouin, N., *et al.* (2013b). "Estimates of aerosol radiative forcing from the MACC reanalysis." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **13**(4): 2045-2062.
- Bellouin, N., et al. (2011). "Aerosol forcing in the Climate Model Intercomparison Project (CMIP5) simulations by HadGEM2-ES and the role of ammonium nitrate." J. Geophys. Res., 116(D20): D20206.
- Berg, A. R., *et al.* (2013). "The impact of bark beetle infestations on monoterpene emissions and secondary organic aerosol formation in western North America." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **13**(6): 3149-3161.
- Bernard, F., et al. (2012). "Thresholds of secondary organic aerosol formation by ozonolysis of monoterpenes measured in a laminar flow aerosol reactor." Journal of Aerosol Science, 43(1): 14-30.
- Betts, A. K. and J. H. Ball (1997). "Albedo over the boreal forest." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **102**(D24): 28901-28909.
- Betts, R. A. (2000). "Offset of the potential carbon sink from boreal forestation by decreases in surface albedo." Nature, **408**(6809): 187-190.
- Betts, R. A., *et al.* (2007). "Biogeophysical effects of land use on climate: Model simulations of radiative forcing and large-scale temperature change." Agricultural and Forest Meteorology, **142**(2-4): 216-233.
- Bonan, G. B. (2008). "Forests and Climate Change: Forcings, Feedbacks, and the Climate Benefits of Forests." Science, **320**: 1444-1449.
- Bonan, G. B., *et al.* (1992). "Effects of boreal forest vegetation on global climate." Nature, **359**(6397): 716-718.
- Bond, T. C., *et al.* (2004). "A technology-based global inventory of black and organic carbon emissions from combustion." J. Geophys. Res., **109**(D14): D14203.
- Bonn, B. and G. K. Moorgat (2002). "New particle formation during a- and b-pinene oxidation by O3, OH and NO3, and the influence of water vapour: particle size distribution studies." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 2(3): 183-196.

- Bonn, B., et al. (2002). "Influence of Water Vapor on the Process of New Particle Formation during Monoterpene Ozonolysis." The Journal of Physical Chemistry A, 106(12): 2869-2881.
- Boucher, O. and U. Lohmann (1995). "The sulfate-CCN-cloud albedo effect." Tellus B, **47**(3): 281-300.
- Bounoua, L., *et al.* (2002). "Effects of Land Cover Conversion on Surface Climate." Climatic Change, **52**(1-2): 29-64.
- Bower, K. N., *et al.* (1994). "A Parameterization of Warm Clouds for Use in Atmospheric General Circulation Models." Journal of the Atmospheric Sciences, **51**(19): 2722-2732.
- Boy, M., *et al.* (2006). "MALTE model to predict new aerosol formation in the lower troposphere." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **6**(12): 4499-4517.
- Boy, M., et al. (2003). "Nucleation events in the continental boundary layer: Long-term statistical analyses of aerosol relevant characteristics." J. Geophys. Res., 108(D21): 4667.
- Breider, T. J., *et al.* (2010). "Impact of BrO on dimethylsulfide in the remote marine boundary layer." Geophys. Res. Lett., **37**(2): L02807.
- Brown, D., *et al.* (2008). "How do we achieve REDD co-benefits and avoid doing harm?" in Moving Ahead with REDD. A. Angelsen, CIFOR. p107-118.
- Browse, J., *et al.* (2012). "The scavenging processes controlling the seasonal cycle in Arctic sulphate and black carbon aerosol." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **12**(15): 6775-6798.
- Burgess, N., *et al.* (2002). "The Uluguru Mountains of eastern Tanzania: the effect of forest loss on biodiversity." Oryx, **36**(02): 140-152.
- Canadell, J. and M. R. Raupach (2008). "Managing Forests for Climate Change Mitigation." Science, **320**: 1456-1457.
- Canadell, J. G., *et al.* (2007). "Contributions to accelerating atmospheric CO2 growth from economic activity, carbon intensity, and efficiency of natural sinks." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, **104**(47): 18866-18870.
- Chang, R. Y. W., *et al.* (2010). "The hygroscopicity parameter ( $\kappa$ ) of ambient organic aerosol at a field site subject to biogenic and anthropogenic influences: relationship to degree of aerosol oxidation." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **10**(11): 5047-5064.
- Chipperfield, M. P. (2006). "New version of the TOMCAT/SLIMCAT off-line chemical transport model: Intercomparison of stratospheric tracer experiments." Quarterly Journal of the Royal Meteorological Society, **132**(617): 1179-1203.

- Chung, S. H. and J. H. Seinfeld (2002). "Global distribution and climate forcing of carbonaceous aerosols." J. Geophys. Res., 107(D19): 4407.
- Claeys, M., *et al.* (2004). "Formation of Secondary Organic Aerosols Through Photooxidation of Isoprene." Science, **303**(5661): 1173-1176.
- Clarke, A. D., *et al.* (1998). "Particle Nucleation in the Tropical Boundary Layer and Its Coupling to Marine Sulfur Sources." Science, **282**(5386): 89-92.
- Clarke, A. D., *et al.* (1999). "Nucleation in the equatorial free troposphere: Favorable environments during PEM-Tropics." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **104**(D5): 5735-5744.
- Claussen, M., *et al.* (2001). "Biogeophysical versus biogeochemical feedbacks of large-scale land cover change." Geophysical Research Letters, **28**(6): 1011-1014.
- Cofala, J., *et al.* (2005). "Scenarios of World Anthropogenic Emissions of SO<sub>2</sub>, NO<sub>x</sub> and CO up to 2030" in Internal report of the Transboundary Air Pollution Programme, International Institute for Applied Systems Analysis, Laxenburg, Austria.
- Corchnoy, S. B., *et al.* (1992). "Hydrocarbon emissions from twelve urban shade trees of the Los Angeles, California, Air Basin." Atmospheric Environment. Part B. Urban Atmosphere, 26(3): 339-348.
- Criegee, R. (1975). "Mechanism of Ozonolysis." Angewandte Chemie International Edition in English, **14**(11): 745-752.
- D'Andrea, S. D., et al. (2013). "Understanding and constraining global secondary organic aerosol amount and size-resolved condensational behavior." Atmos. Chem. Phys. Discuss., 13: 18969-19007.
- Davin, E. L. and N. de Noblet-Ducoudré (2010). "Climatic Impact of Global-Scale Deforestation: Radiative versus Nonradiative Processes." Journal of Climate, 23(1): 97-112.
- Delene, D. J. and T. Deshler (2001). "Vertical profiles of cloud condensation nuclei above Wyoming." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **106**(D12): 12579-12588.
- Dement, W. A., *et al.* (1975). "Mechanism of monoterpene volatilization in Salvia mellifera." Phytochemistry, **14**(12): 2555-2557.
- Denman, K. L., *et al.* (2007). "Couplings Between Changes in the Climate System and Biogeochemistry" in Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change. S. Solomon, D. Qin, M. Manninget al, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK and New York, USA.

- Dentener, F., *et al.* (2006). "Emissions of primary aerosol and precursor gases in the years 2000 and 1750 prescribed data-sets for AeroCom." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **6**(12): 4321-4344.
- Ding, X., et al. (2008). "Spatial and Seasonal Trends in Biogenic Secondary Organic Aerosol Tracers and Water-Soluble Organic Carbon in the Southeastern United States." Environmental Science & Technology, 42(14): 5171-5176.
- Dixon, R. K., *et al.* (1994). "Carbon Pools and Flux of Global Forest Ecosystems." Science, **263**(5144): 185-190.
- Donahue, N. M., *et al.* (1998). "Direct observation of OH production from the ozonolysis of olefins." Geophysical Research Letters, **25**(1): 59-62.
- Donahue, N. M., *et al.* (2011). "Theoretical constraints on pure vapor-pressure driven condensation of organics to ultrafine particles." Geophys. Res. Lett., **38**(16): L16801.
- Dooley, K., *et al.* (2008). Cutting Corners: World Bank's forest and carbon fund fails forests and peoples, FERN / Forest Peoples Programme.
- Dudareva, N., *et al.* (2006). "Plant Volatiles: Recent Advances and Future Perspectives." Critical Reviews in Plant Sciences, **25**(5): 417-440.
- Dunne, E. M., *et al.* (2012). "No statistically significant effect of a short-term decrease in the nucleation rate on atmospheric aerosols." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **12**(23): 11573-11587.
- Duplissy, J., et al. (2008). "Cloud forming potential of secondary organic aerosol under near atmospheric conditions." Geophys. Res. Lett., 35(3): L03818.
- Dusek, U., *et al.* (2010). "Enhanced organic mass fraction and decreased hygroscopicity of cloud condensation nuclei (CCN) during new particle formation events." Geophys. Res. Lett., **37**(3): L03804.
- Dusek, U., et al. (2006). "Size Matters More Than Chemistry for Cloud-Nucleating Ability of Aerosol Particles." Science, 312(5778): 1375-1378.
- Easter, R. C. and J. M. Hales (1983). "Interpretation of the OSCAR data for reactive gas scavenging" in Precipitation scavenging, dry deposition and resuspension, Elsevier, New York. p649-662.
- Edney, E. O., *et al.* (2005). "Formation of 2-methyl tetrols and 2-methylglyceric acid in secondary organic aerosol from laboratory irradiated isoprene/NO<sub>X</sub>/SO<sub>2</sub>/air mixtures and their detection in ambient PM<sub>2.5</sub> samples collected in the eastern United States." Atmospheric Environment, **39**(29): 5281-5289.
- Edwards, J. M. and A. Slingo (1996). "Studies with a flexible new radiation code. I: Choosing a configuration for a large-scale model." Quarterly Journal of the Royal Meteorological Society, **122**(531): 689-719.

- Elleman, R. A. and D. S. Covert (2009). "Aerosol size distribution modeling with the Community Multiscale Air Quality modeling system in the Pacific Northwest: 2. Parameterizations for ternary nucleation and nucleation mode processes." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **114**(D11): D11207.
- Engelhart, G. J., *et al.* (2008). "CCN activity and droplet growth kinetics of fresh and aged monoterpene secondary organic aerosol." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **8**(14): 3937-3949.
- Engelhart, G. J., *et al.* (2011). "Cloud condensation nuclei activity of isoprene secondary organic aerosol." J. Geophys. Res., **116**(D2): D02207.
- Evans, R. C., *et al.* (1985). "Interspecies Variation in Terpenoid Emissions from Engelmann and Sitka Spruce Seedlings." Forest Science, **31**(1): 132-142.
- Fan, J., *et al.* (2006). "Contribution of secondary condensable organics to new particle formation: A case study in Houston, Texas." Geophys. Res. Lett., **33**(15): L15802.
- Fang, J.-y., *et al.* (1998). "Forest Biomass of China: An Estimate Based on the Biomass-Volume Relationship." Ecological Applications, 8(4): 1084-1091.
- Fang, J., et al. (2001). "Changes in Forest Biomass Carbon Storage in China Between 1949 and 1998." Science, 292(5525): 2320-2322.
- FAO (2010). Global Forest Resources Assessment 2010. FAO Forestry Paper 163. Rome, United Nations.
- FAO (2012). State of the World's Forests. Rome, United Nations.
- Fearnside, P. M. (2005). "Deforestation in Brazilian Amazonia: History, Rates, and Consequences." Conservation Biology, 19(3): 680-688.
- Forster, P., *et al.* (2007). "Changes in Atmospheric Constituents and in Radiative Forcing" in Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change.
  S. Solomon, D. Qin, M. Manninget al, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK and New York, USA.
- Fountoukis, C. and A. Nenes (2005). "Continued development of a cloud droplet formation parameterization for global climate models." J. Geophys. Res., **110**(D11): D11212.
- Friedlingstein, P., et al. (2010). "Update on CO<sub>2</sub> emissions." Nature Geoscience, **3**: 811-812.
- Fuchs, N. A. and A. G. Sutugin (1971). "Highly dispersed aerosols" in Topics in current aerosol research. New York, Pergamin. p1-60.
- Fuller, E. N., *et al.* (1966). "New method for prediction of binary gas-phase diffusion coefficients." Industrial & Engineering Chemistry, 58(5): 18-27.

- Geron, C. D. and R. R. Arnts (2010). "Seasonal monoterpene and sesquiterpene emissions from Pinus taeda and Pinus virginiana." Atmospheric Environment, **44**(34): 4240-4251.
- Gibbard, S., *et al.* (2005). "Climate effects of global land cover change." Geophysical Research Letters, **32**(23): L23705.
- Gibbs, H. K., *et al.* (2008). "Carbon payback times for crop-based biofuel expansion in the tropics: the effects of changing yield and technology." Environmental Research Letters, 3(3): 034001.
- Gibbs, H. K., *et al.* (2010). "Tropical forests were the primary sources of new agricultural land in the 1980s and 1990s." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences.
- Goldstein, A. H. and I. E. Galbally (2007). "Known and Unexplored Organic Constituents in the Earth's Atmosphere." Environmental Science & Technology, 41(5): 1514-1521.
- Gong, S. L. (2003). "A parameterization of sea-salt aerosol source function for sub- and super-micron particles." Global Biogeochem. Cycles, **17**(4): 1097.
- Goto, D., *et al.* (2008). "Importance of global aerosol modeling including secondary organic aerosol formed from monoterpene." J. Geophys. Res., **113**(D7): D07205.
- Grainger, A. (1993). "The Causes of Deforestation" in Controlling Tropical Deforestation, Earthscan. p49-68.
- Griffin, R. J., *et al.* (1999). "Estimate of Global Atmospheric Organic Aerosol from Oxidation of Biogenic Hydrocarbons." Geophys. Res. Lett., **26**(17): 2721-2724.
- Grosjean, D., *et al.* (1993). "Atmospheric chemistry of isoprene and of its carbonyl products." Environmental Science & Technology, **27**(5): 830-840.
- Guenther, A., *et al.* (1995). "A global model of natural volatile organic compound emissions." J. Geophys. Res., **100**(D5): 8873-8892.
- Guenther, A., *et al.* (2006). "Estimates of global terrestrial isoprene emissions using MEGAN (Model of Emissions of Gases and Aerosols from Nature)." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 6(11): 3181-3210.
- Guenther, A. B., *et al.* (2012). "The Model of Emissions of Gases and Aerosols from Nature version 2.1 (MEGAN2.1): an extended and updated framework for modeling biogenic emissions." Geosci. Model Dev., 5(6): 1471-1492.
- Guenther, A. B., *et al.* (1991). "Isoprene and monoterpene emission rate variability: Observations with eucalyptus and emission rate algorithm development." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **96**(D6): 10799-10808.

- Guenther, A. B., *et al.* (1993). "Isoprene and monoterpene emission rate variability: Model evaluations and sensitivity analyses." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **98**(D7): 12609-12617.
- Guibert, S., *et al.* (2003). "Aerosol activation in marine stratocumulus clouds: 1. Measurement validation for a closure study." J. Geophys. Res., **108**(D15): 8628.
- Gullison, R. E., et al. (2007). "Tropical Forests and Climate Policy." Science, **316**(5827): 985-986.
- Gumpenberger, M., et al. (2010). "Predicting pan-tropical climate change induced forest stock gains and losses - implications for REDD." Environmental Research Letters, 5(1): 014013.
- Gunthe, S. S., *et al.* (2009). "Cloud condensation nuclei in pristine tropical rainforest air of Amazonia: size-resolved measurements and modeling of atmospheric aerosol composition and CCN activity." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **9**(19): 7551-7575.
- Haapanala, S., *et al.* (2012). "Is forest management a significant source of monoterpenes into the boreal atmosphere?" Biogeosciences, 9(4): 1291-1300.
- Häkkinen, S. A. K., *et al.* (2013). "Semi-empirical parameterization of size-dependent atmospheric nanoparticle growth in continental environments." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 13(15): 7665-7682.
- Hakola, H., *et al.* (1994). "Product formation from the gas-phase reactions of OH radicals and O3 with a series of monoterpenes." Journal of Atmospheric Chemistry, **18**(1): 75-102.
- Hakola, H., et al. (2012). "In situ measurements of volatile organic compounds in a boreal forest." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 12(23): 11665-11678.
- Hakola, H., *et al.* (2000). "The ambient concentrations of biogenic hydrocarbons at a northern European, boreal site." Atmospheric Environment, **34**(29–30): 4971-4982.
- Hallgren, W., *et al.* (2013). "Climate impacts of a large-scale biofuels expansion." Geophysical Research Letters, **40**(8): 1624-1630.
- Hallquist, M., *et al.* (2009). "The formation, properties and impact of secondary organic aerosol: current and emerging issues." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **9**(14): 5155-5236.
- Halmer, M. M., *et al.* (2002). "The annual volcanic gas input into the atmosphere, in particular into the stratosphere: a global data set for the past 100 years." Journal of Volcanology and Geothermal Research, **115**(3–4): 511-528.
- Hansen, J., et al. (1997). "Radiative forcing and climate response." J. Geophys. Res., 102.
- Hansen, M. C., *et al.* (2010). "Quantification of global gross forest cover loss." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, **107**(19): 8650-8655.

Harborne, J. B. (1988). Introduction to Ecological Biochemistry, Academic Press.

Hard, T. M., et al. (1986). "Diurnal cycle of tropospheric OH." Nature, 322(6080): 617-620.

- Hardacre, C. J., *et al.* (2013). "Probabilistic estimation of future emissions of isoprene and surface oxidant chemistry associated with land-use change in response to growing food needs." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **13**(11): 5451-5472.
- Harsch, M. A., *et al.* (2009). "Are treelines advancing? A global meta-analysis of treeline response to climate warming." Ecology Letters, **12**(10): 1040-1049.
- Hatakeyama, S., *et al.* (1989). "Reactions of ozone with α-pinene and β-pinene in air: Yields of gaseous and particulate products." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **94**(D10): 13013-13024.
- Hatakeyama, S., *et al.* (1991). "Reactions of OH with  $\alpha$ -pinene and  $\beta$ -pinene in air: Estimate of global CO production from the atmospheric oxidation of terpenes." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **96**(D1): 947-958.
- Hatakka, J., *et al.* (2003). "Overview of the atmospheric research activities and results at Pallas GAW station." Boreal Environment Research, **8**: 365-383.
- Heald, C. L., *et al.* (2011). "Exploring the vertical profile of atmospheric organic aerosol: comparing 17 aircraft field campaigns with a global model." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 11(24): 12673-12696.
- Heald, C. L., *et al.* (2008). "Predicted change in global secondary organic aerosol concentrations in response to future climate, emissions, and land use change." J. Geophys. Res., **113**(D5): D05211.
- Heald, C. L., *et al.* (2010). "Satellite observations cap the atmospheric organic aerosol budget." Geophysical Research Letters, **37**(24): L24808.
- Hegg, D. A., *et al.* (1997). "Chemical apportionment of aerosol column optical depth off the mid-Atlantic coast of the United States." J. Geophys. Res., **102**(D21): 25293-25303.
- Helmig, D., et al. (1999). "Biogenic volatile organic compound emissions (BVOCs) I. Identifications from three continental sites in the U.S." Chemosphere, 38(9): 2163-2187.
- Herrmann, F., *et al.* (2010). "Hydroxyl radical (OH) yields from the ozonolysis of both double bonds for five monoterpenes." Atmospheric Environment, **44**(28): 3458-3464.
- Hewitt, C. N., *et al.* (2011). "Ground-level ozone influenced by circadian control of isoprene emissions." Nature Geosci, **4**(10): 671-674.
- Hoffmann, T., *et al.* (1997). "Formation of Organic Aerosols from the Oxidation of Biogenic Hydrocarbons." Journal of Atmospheric Chemistry, **26**(2): 189-222.

- Holtslag, A. A. M. and B. A. Boville (1993). "Local Versus Nonlocal Boundary-Layer Diffusion in a Global Climate Model." Journal of Climate, **6**(10): 1825-1842.
- Houghton, R. A. (2003). "Revised estimates of the annual net flux of carbon to the atmosphere from changes in land use and land management 1850-2000." Tellus B, 55(2): 378-390.
- Houghton, R. A., *et al.* (2012). "Carbon emissions from land use and land-cover change." Biogeosciences, **9**(12): 5125-5142.
- Hov, Ø., et al. (1983). "Measurement and modeling of the concentrations of terpenes in coniferous forest air." Journal of Geophysical Research: Oceans, 88(C15): 10679-10688.
- Hudson, J. G. and P. R. Frisbie (1991). "Surface cloud condensation nuclei and condensation nuclei measurements at Reno, Nevada." Atmospheric Environment. Part A. General Topics, 25(10): 2285-2299.
- Ion, A. C., *et al.* (2005). "Polar organic compounds in rural PM2.5 aerosols from K-puszta, Hungary, during a 2003 summer field campaign: Sources and diel variations." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 5(7): 1805-1814.
- Jacobson, M. (2005). Fundamentals of Atmospheric Modelling, Cambridge University Press.
- Janson, R. (1992). "Monoterpene concentrations in and above a forest of scots pine." Journal of Atmospheric Chemistry, **14**(1-4): 385-394.
- Janson, R., *et al.* (2001). "Biogenic emissions and gaseous precursors to forest aerosols." Tellus B, **53**(4): 423-440.
- Jaoui, M., *et al.* (2007). "β-caryophyllinic acid: An atmospheric tracer for β-caryophyllene secondary organic aerosol." Geophysical Research Letters, **34**(5): L05816.
- Jardine, K., *et al.* (2011). "Within-canopy sesquiterpene ozonolysis in Amazonia." J. Geophys. Res., **116**(D19): D19301.
- Jimenez, J. L., *et al.* (2009). "Evolution of Organic Aerosols in the Atmosphere." Science, **326**(5959): 1525-1529.
- Jin, Y., et al. (2002). "How does snow impact the albedo of vegetated land surfaces as analyzed with MODIS data?" Geophysical Research Letters, 29(10): 12-11-12-14.
- Jones, A., *et al.* (1994). "A climate model study of indirect radiative forcing by anthropogenic sulphate aerosols." Nature, **370**: 450-453.
- Jones, A., et al. (2001). "Indirect sulphate aerosol forcing in a climate model with an interactive sulphur cycle." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, 106(D17): 20293-20310.

- Kamens, R. M., *et al.* (1982). "Ozone–isoprene reactions: Product formation and aerosol potential." International Journal of Chemical Kinetics, 14(9): 955-975.
- Kanakidou, M., *et al.* (2005). "Organic aerosol and global climate modelling: a review." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **5**(4): 1053-1123.
- Kanawade, V. P., *et al.* (2011). "Isoprene suppression of new particle formation in a mixed deciduous forest." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **11**(12): 6013-6027.
- Kavouras, I. G., *et al.* (1998). "Formation of atmospheric particles from organic acids produced by forests." Nature, **395**(6703): 683-686.
- Kavouras, I. G., *et al.* (1999). "Formation and gas/particle partitioning of monoterpenes photo-oxidation products over forests." Geophys. Res. Lett., **26**(1): 55-58.
- Kerminen, V.-M. and M. Kulmala (2002). "Analytical formulae connecting the "real" and the "apparent" nucleation rate and the nuclei number concentration for atmospheric nucleation events." Journal of Aerosol Science, **33**(4): 609-622.
- Kessler, A. and I. T. Baldwin (2001). "Defensive Function of Herbivore-Induced Plant Volatile Emissions in Nature." Science, **291**(5511): 2141-2144.
- Kettle, A. J. and M. O. Andreae (2000). "Flux of dimethylsulfide from the oceans: A comparison of updated data sets and flux models." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **105**(D22): 26793-26808.
- Khalil, M. A. K. and R. A. Rasmussen (1984). "Global sources, lifetimes and mass balances of carbonyl sulfide (OCS) and carbon disulfide (CS2) in the earth's atmosphere." Atmospheric Environment (1967), 18(9): 1805-1813.
- Kiendler-Scharr, A., *et al.* (2009). "New particle formation in forests inhibited by isoprene emissions." Nature, **461**(7262): 381-384.
- King, S. M., *et al.* (2010). "Cloud droplet activation of mixed organic-sulfate particles produced by the photooxidation of isoprene." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **10**(8): 3953-3964.
- Kirkby, J., *et al.* (2011). "Role of sulphuric acid, ammonia and galactic cosmic rays in atmospheric aerosol nucleation." Nature, **476**(7361): 429-433.
- Köhler, H. (1936). "The nucleus in and the growth of hygroscopic droplets." Transactions of the Faraday Society, **32**(0): 1152-1161.
- Komppula, M., et al. (2003). "Observations of new particle formation and size distributions at two different heights and surroundings in subarctic area in northern Finland." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **108**(D9): 4295.

- Korhonen, H., *et al.* (2010). "Enhancement of marine cloud albedo via controlled sea spray injections: a global model study of the influence of emission rates, microphysics and transport." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **10**(9): 4133-4143.
- Kourtchev, I., *et al.* (2005). "Observation of 2-methyltetrols and related photo-oxidation products of isoprene in boreal forest aerosols from Hyytiala, Finland." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 5(10): 2761-2770.
- Kroll, J. H., *et al.* (2005). "Secondary organic aerosol formation from isoprene photooxidation under high-NOx conditions." Geophys. Res. Lett., **32**(18): L18808.
- Kroll, J. H., *et al.* (2006). "Secondary Organic Aerosol Formation from Isoprene Photooxidation." Environmental Science & Technology, **40**(6): 1869-1877.
- Kroll, J. H. and J. H. Seinfeld (2008). "Chemistry of secondary organic aerosol: Formation and evolution of low-volatility organics in the atmosphere." Atmospheric Environment, 42(16): 3593-3624.
- Kulmala, M., *et al.* (2001a). "Overview of the international project on biogenic aerosol formation in the boreal forest (BIOFOR)." Tellus B, **53**(4): 324-343.
- Kulmala, M., et al. (2013). "Direct Observations of Atmospheric Aerosol Nucleation." Science, 339(6122): 943-946.
- Kulmala, M., *et al.* (1998a). "Parameterisations for sulphuric acid / water nucleation rates." Journal of Geophysical Research-Atmospheres, **103**(D7): 8301-8307.
- Kulmala, M., *et al.* (2006). "Cluster activation theory as an explanation of the linear dependence between formation rate of 3nm particles and sulphuric acid concentration." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **6**: 787-793.
- Kulmala, M., *et al.* (2001b). "On the formation, growth and composition of nucleation mode particles." Tellus B, **53**(4): 479-490.
- Kulmala, M., *et al.* (1998b). "Analysis of the growth of nucleation mode particles observed in Boreal forest." Tellus B, **50**(5): 449-462.
- Kulmala, M., *et al.* (2004). "Formation and growth rates of ultrafine atmospheric particles: a review of observations." Journal of Aerosol Science, **35**(2): 143-176.
- Kurten, T., *et al.* (2003). "Estimation of different forest-related contributions to the radiative balance using observations in southern Finland." Boreal Environment Research, 8: 275-285.
- Kwok, E. S. C., *et al.* (1996). "Product formation from the reaction of the NO3 radical with isoprene and rate constants for the reactions of methacrolein and methyl vinyl ketone with the NO3 radical." International Journal of Chemical Kinetics, **28**(12): 925-934.

- Laaksonen, A., *et al.* (2008). "The role of VOC oxidation products in continental new particle formation." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 8(10): 2657-2665.
- Lamb, B., *et al.* (1987). "A national inventory of biogenic hydrocarbon emissions." Atmospheric Environment (1967), **21**(8): 1695-1705.
- Lambe, A. T., *et al.* (2013). "Relationship between Oxidation Level and Optical Properties of Secondary Organic Aerosol." Environmental Science & Technology, **47**(12): 6349-6357.
- Lange, B. M., *et al.* (2000). "Isoprenoid biosynthesis: The evolution of two ancient and distinct pathways across genomes." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, 97(24): 13172-13177.
- Lappalainen, H. K., *et al.* (2009). "Day-time concentrations of biogenic volatile organic compounds in a boreal forest canopy and their relation to environmental and biological factors." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 9(15): 5447-5459.
- Lathière, J., *et al.* (2005). "Past and future changes in biogenic volatile organic compound emissions simulated with a global dynamic vegetation model." Geophys. Res. Lett., 32: L20818.
- Lawrence, D. M., *et al.* (2011). "Parameterization improvements and functional and structural advances in Version 4 of the Community Land Model." Journal of Advances in Modeling Earth Systems, 3(1): n/a-n/a.
- Lawrence, P. J. and T. N. Chase (2007). "Representing a new MODIS consistent land surface in the Community Land Model (CLM 3.0)." Journal of Geophysical Research: Biogeosciences, 112(G1): G01023.
- Lean, J. and D. A. Warrilow (1989). "Simulation of the regional climatic impact of Amazon deforestation." Nature, 342: 411-413.
- Lee, L. A., *et al.* (2013). "The magnitude and causes of uncertainty in global model simulations of cloud condensation nuclei." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **13**: 8879-8914.
- Lee, S.-H., *et al.* (2003). "Particle Formation by Ion Nucleation in the Upper Troposphere and Lower Stratosphere." Science, **301**(5641): 1886-1889.
- Lehtinen, K. E. J., *et al.* (2003). "On the concept of condensation sink diameter." Boreal Environment Research, **8**(4): 405-411.
- Lelieveld, J., *et al.* (2008). "Atmospheric oxidation capacity sustained by a tropical forest." Nature, **452**(7188): 737-740.
- Lenton, T. M., *et al.* (2008). "Tipping elements in the Earth's climate system." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, **105**(6): 1786-1793.

- Leonard, R. E. and A. R. Eschner (1968). "Albedo of Intercepted Snow." Water Resources Research, **4**(5): 931-935.
- Lichtenthaler, H. K., *et al.* (1997). "Biosynthesis of isoprenoids in higher plant chloroplasts proceeds via a mevalonate-independent pathway." FEBS Letters, **400**(3): 271-274.
- Lihavainen, H., *et al.* (2009). "Observational signature of the direct radiative effect by natural boreal forest aerosols and its relation to the corresponding first indirect effect." J. Geophys. Res., **114**: D20206.
- Lin, Y.-H., *et al.* (2013). "Epoxide as a precursor to secondary organic aerosol formation from isoprene photooxidation in the presence of nitrogen oxides." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, **110**(17): 6718-6723.
- Lohmann, U. and J. Feichter (2005). "Global indirect aerosol effects: a review." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **5**(3): 715-737.
- Loreto, F. and V. Velikova (2001). "Isoprene Produced by Leaves Protects the Photosynthetic Apparatus against Ozone Damage, Quenches Ozone Products, and Reduces Lipid Peroxidation of Cellular Membranes." Plant Physiology, **127**(4): 1781-1787.
- Lovejoy, E. R., *et al.* (2004). "Atmospheric ion-induced nucleation of sulfuric acid and water." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **109**(D8): D08204.
- Mahowald, N., *et al.* (2011). "Aerosol Impacts on Climate and Biogeochemistry." Annual Review of Environment and Resources, **36**(1): 45-74.
- Makkonen, R., *et al.* (2009). "Sensitivity of aerosol concentrations and cloud properties to nucleation and secondary organic distribution in ECHAM5-HAM global circulation model." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 9(5): 1747-1766.
- Malhi, Y., *et al.* (2013). "African rainforests: past, present and future." Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences, **368**(1625).
- Mann, G. W., *et al.* (2012). "Intercomparison of modal and sectional aerosol microphysics representations within the same 3-D global chemical transport model." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **12**(10): 4449-4476.
- Mann, G. W., et al. (2010). "Description and evaluation of GLOMAP-mode: a modal global aerosol microphysics model for the UKCA composition-climate model." Geosci. Model Dev., 3(2): 519-551.
- Matthews, H. D. and K. Caldeira (2008). "Stabilizing climate requires near-zero emissions." Geophys. Res. Lett., **35**(4): L04705.
- Mayaux, P., *et al.* (2013). "State and evolution of the African rainforests between 1990 and 2010." Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences, 368(1625).

- McFiggans, G., *et al.* (2006). "The effect of physical and chemical aerosol properties on warm cloud droplet activation." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **6**(9): 2593-2649.
- McGarvey, D. J. and R. Croteau (1995). "Terpenoid metabolism." The Plant Cell Online, **7**(7): 1015-1026.
- Meehl, G. A., *et al.* (2007). "Global Climate Projections" in Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change. S. Solomon, D. Qin, M. Manninget al, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK and New York, USA.
- Meinshausen, M., *et al.* (2009). "Greenhouse-gas emission targets for limiting global warming to 2°C." Nature, **458**(7242): 1158-1162.
- Merikanto, J., *et al.* (2007). "New parameterization of sulfuric acid-ammonia-water ternary nucleation rates at tropospheric conditions." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **112**(D15): D15207.
- Merikanto, J., *et al.* (2009). "Impact of nucleation on global CCN." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **9**: 8601-8616.
- Merikanto, J., *et al.* (2010). "Effects of boundary layer particle formation on cloud droplet number and changes in cloud albedo from 1850 to 2000." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 10(2): 695-705.
- Metzger, A., et al. (2010). "Evidence for the role of organics in aerosol particle formation under atmospheric conditions." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, 107(15): 6646-6651.
- Miettinen, J., *et al.* (2011). "Deforestation rates in insular Southeast Asia between 2000 and 2010." Global Change Biology, **17**(7): 2261-2270.
- Mihelcic, D., *et al.* (1993). "Simultaneous measurements of peroxy and nitrate radicals at Schauinsland." Journal of Atmospheric Chemistry, **16**(4): 313-335.
- Modgil, M. S., *et al.* (2005). "A parameterization of ion-induced nucleation of sulphuric acid and water for atmospheric conditions." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **110**(D19): D19205.
- Monson, R. K., *et al.* (1992). "Relationships among Isoprene Emission Rate, Photosynthesis, and Isoprene Synthase Activity as Influenced by Temperature." Plant Physiology, **98**: 1175-1180.
- Monteith, J. L. and M. H. Unsworth (2008a). "Microclimatology of Radiation (i)" in Principles of Environmental Physics, Academic Press. p86-99.
- Monteith, J. L. and M. H. Unsworth (2008b). "Micrometeorology (i)" in Principles of Environmental Physics, Academic Press. p300-334.

- Morice, C. P., *et al.* (2012). "Quantifying uncertainties in global and regional temperature change using an ensemble of observational estimates: The HadCRUT4 data set." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **117**(D8): D08101.
- Muller, C. H. (1966). "The Role of Chemical Inhibition (Allelopathy) in Vegetational Composition." Bulletin of the Torrey Botanical Club, 93(5): 332-351.
- Myhre, G. (2009). "Consistency Between Satellite-Derived and Modeled Estimates of the Direct Aerosol Effect." Science, **325**(5937): 187-190.
- Myhre, G., *et al.* (1998). "New Estimates of Radiative Forcing Due to Well Mixed Greenhouse Gases." Geophys. Res. Lett., **25**.
- Myhre, G., *et al.* (2013). "Radiative forcing of the direct aerosol effect from AeroCom Phase II simulations." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **13**(4): 1853-1877.
- Myneni, R. B., *et al.* (2002). "Global products of vegetation leaf area and fraction absorbed PAR from year one of MODIS data." Remote Sensing of Environment, **83**(1-2): 214-231.
- Nakayama, T., *et al.* (2010). "Laboratory studies on optical properties of secondary organic aerosols generated during the photooxidation of toluene and the ozonolysis of α-pinene." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **115**(D24): D24204.
- Nakicenovic, N., *et al.* (2000). Special Report on Emission Scenarios. N. Nakicenovic and R. Swart.
- Napari, I., *et al.* (2002). "An improved model for ternary nucleation of sulfuric acid-ammonia--water." The Journal of Chemical Physics, **116**(10): 4221-4227.
- Nenes, A. and J. H. Seinfeld (2003). "Parameterization of cloud droplet formation in global climate models." J. Geophys. Res., 108(D14): 4415.
- Ng, N. L., *et al.* (2007). "Effect of NOx level on secondary organic aerosol (SOA) formation from the photooxidation of terpenes." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **7**(19): 5159-5174.
- Niinemets, Ü., *et al.* (2002). "A model coupling foliar monoterpene emissions to leaf photosynthetic characteristics in Mediterranean evergreen Quercus species." New Phytologist, **153**(2): 257-275.
- Niinemets, Ü., *et al.* (1999). "A model of isoprene emission based on energetic requirements for isoprene synthesis and leaf photosynthetic properties for Liquidambar and Quercus." Plant, Cell & Environment, **22**(11): 1319-1335.
- NOAA. (2013). "Trends in Atmospheric Carbon Dioxide." Retrieved 17/07/2013, from <a href="http://www.esrl.noaa.gov/gmd/ccgg/trends/">http://www.esrl.noaa.gov/gmd/ccgg/trends/</a>.
- O'Donnell, D., *et al.* (2011). "Estimating the direct and indirect effects of secondary organic aerosols using ECHAM5-HAM." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **11**(16): 8635-8659.

- O'Dowd, C. D., *et al.* (2002). "Aerosol formation: Atmospheric particles from organic vapours." Nature, **416**(6880): 497-498.
- Odum, J. R., *et al.* (1996). "Gas/Particle Partitioning and Secondary Organic Aerosol Yields." Environmental Science & Technology, **30**(8): 2580-2585.
- Ogura, K. and T. Koyama (1998). "Enzymatic Aspects of Isoprenoid Chain Elongation." Chemical Reviews, **98**(4): 1263-1276.
- Oh, K. H., et al. (1967). "Effect of Various Essential Oils Isolated from Douglas Fir Needles upon Sheep and Deer Rumen Microbial Activity." Applied Microbiology, 15: 777-784.
- Okamoto, R. A., *et al.* (1981). "Volatile terpenes in Sequoia sempervirens foliage. Changes in composition during maturation." Journal of Agricultural and Food Chemistry, **29**(2): 324-326.
- Oleson, K. W., *et al.* (2010). Technical Description of version 4.0 of the Community Land Model (CLM). NCAR Technical Note NCAR/TN-478+STR. Boulder, Colorado, National Centre for Atmospheric Research: 257.
- Olson, J. (1992). World ecosystems(W E1.4): Digital raster data on a 10 minute geographic 1080 x 2160 grid. NOAA National Geophysical Data Center. Boulder, CO.
- Otto, A., *et al.* (2013). "Energy budget constraints on climate response." Nature Geoscience, **6**(6): 415-416.
- Paasonen, P., *et al.* (2013). "Warming-induced increase in aerosol number concentration likely to moderate climate change." Nature Geoscience, 6(6): 438-442.
- Paasonen, P., *et al.* (2010). "On the roles of sulphuric acid and low-volatility organic vapours in the initial steps of atmospheric new particle formation." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 10(22): 11223-11242.
- Pacifico, F., *et al.* (2012). "Sensitivity of biogenic isoprene emissions to past, present, and future environmental conditions and implications for atmospheric chemistry." J. Geophys. Res., **117**(D22): D22302.
- Pan, Y., et al. (2011). "A Large and Persistent Carbon Sink in the World's Forests." Science, 333(6045): 988-993.
- Pandis, S. N., *et al.* (1991). "Aerosol formation in the photooxidation of isoprene and βpinene." Atmospheric Environment. Part A. General Topics, 25(5-6): 997-1008.
- Pankow, J. F. (1994a). "An absorption model of gas/particle partitioning of organic compounds in the atmosphere." Atmospheric Environment, 28(2): 185-188.
- Pankow, J. F. (1994b). "An absorption model of the gas/aerosol partitioning involved in the formation of secondary organic aerosol." Atmospheric Environment, 28(2): 189-193.

- Parry, M. L., *et al.* (2007). "Technical Summary" in Climate Change 2007: Impacts, Adaptation and Vulnerability. Contribution of Working Group II to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change. M. L. Parry, O. F. Canziani, J. P. Palutikof, P. J. v. d. Linden and C. E. Hanson, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK and New York, USA.
- Paulson, S. E., *et al.* (1992a). "Atmospheric photooxidation of isoprene part I: The hydroxyl radical and ground state atomic oxygen reactions." International Journal of Chemical Kinetics, 24(1): 79-101.
- Paulson, S. E., *et al.* (1992b). "Atmospheric photooxidation of isoprene part II: The ozoneisoprene reaction." International Journal of Chemical Kinetics, 24(1): 103-125.
- Paulson, S. E., *et al.* (1997). "Evidence for formation of OH radicals from the reaction of O3 with alkenes in the gas phase." Geophysical Research Letters, **24**(24): 3193-3196.
- Peeters, J., *et al.* (2009). "HOx radical regeneration in the oxidation of isoprene." Physical Chemistry Chemical Physics, **11**(28): 5935-5939.
- Peeters, J., *et al.* (2001). "The detailed mechanism of the OH-initiated atmospheric oxidation of  $\alpha$ -pinene: a theoretical study." Physical Chemistry Chemical Physics, **3**(24): 5489-5504.
- Peng, Y., et al. (2005). "Importance of vertical velocity variations in the cloud droplet nucleation process of marine stratus clouds." J. Geophys. Res., 110(D21): D21213.
- Penner, J. E., et al. (2001). "Aerosols, their Direct and Indirect Effects" in Climate Change 2001: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Third Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change. J. T. Houghton, Y. Ding, D. J. Griggset al, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK and New York, USA.
- Penner, J. E., *et al.* (2011). "Satellite methods underestimate indirect climate forcing by aerosols." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, **108**(33): 13404-13408.
- Peters, G. P., *et al.* (2013). "The challenge to keep global warming below 2 degrees C." Nature Clim. Change, **3**(1): 4-6.
- Petroff, A., *et al.* (2008a). "Aerosol dry deposition on vegetative canopies. Part I: Review of present knowledge." Atmospheric Environment, **42**(16): 3625-3653.
- Petroff, A., et al. (2008b). "Aerosol dry deposition on vegetative canopies. Part II: A new modelling approach and applications." Atmospheric Environment, 42(16): 3654-3683.

- Petroff, A. and L. Zhang (2010). "Development and validation of a size-resolved particle dry deposition scheme for application in aerosol transport models." Geosci. Model Dev., 3(2): 753-769.
- Petroff, A., *et al.* (2009). "An extended dry deposition model for aerosols onto broadleaf canopies." Journal of Aerosol Science, **40**(3): 218-240.
- Petters, M. D. and S. M. Kreidenweis (2007). "A single parameter representation of hygroscopic growth and cloud condensation nucleus activity." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 7(8): 1961-1971.
- Petters, M. D., *et al.* (2006). "Chemical aging and the hydrophobic-to-hydrophilic conversion of carbonaceous aerosol." Geophys. Res. Lett., **33**(24): L24806.
- Pham, M., *et al.* (1995). "A three-dimensional study of the tropospheric sulfur cycle." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **100**(D12): 26061-26092.
- Pierce, J. R., *et al.* (2013). "Weak global sensitivity of cloud condensation nuclei and the aerosol indirect effect to Criegee + SO2 chemistry." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **13**(6): 3163-3176.
- Pierce, J. R., *et al.* (2012). "Nucleation and condensational growth to CCN sizes during a sustained pristine biogenic SOA event in a forested mountain valley." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **12**(7): 3147-3163.
- Pierce, J. R., *et al.* (2011). "Quantification of the volatility of secondary organic compounds in ultrafine particles during nucleation events." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **11**(17): 9019-9036.
- Pierce, T., et al. (1998). "Influence of increased isoprene emissions on regional ozone modeling." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, 103(D19): 25611-25629.
- Pierce, T. E. and P. S. Waldruff (1991). "PC-BEIS: A Personal Computer Version of the Biogenic Emissions Inventory System." Journal of the Air & Waste Management Association, 41(7): 937-941.
- Pongratz, J., et al. (2011). "Past land use decisions have increased mitigation potential of reforestation." Geophys. Res. Lett., 38(15): L15701.
- Pongratz, J., *et al.* (2010). "Biogeophysical versus biogeochemical climate response to historical anthropogenic land cover change." Geophys. Res. Lett., **37**(8): L08702.
- Prather, M. J. (1986). "Numerical advection by conservation of second-order moments." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **91**(D6): 6671-6681.
- Prentice, I. C., *et al.* (2001). "The Carbon Cycle and Atmospheric Carbon Dioxide" in Climate Change 2001: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Third Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change.

J. T. Houghton, Y. Ding, D. J. Griggset al, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK and New York, USA.

- Presto, A. A., *et al.* (2005). "Secondary Organic Aerosol Production from Terpene Ozonolysis. 2. Effect of NOx Concentration." Environmental Science & Technology, 39(18): 7046-7054.
- Pringle, K. J. (2006). Aerosol-cloud interactions in a global model of aerosol microphysics, University of Leeds. PhD.
- Pringle, K. J., *et al.* (2009). "The relationship between aerosol and cloud drop number concentrations in a global aerosol microphysics model." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 9(12): 4131-4144.
- Pye, H. O. T. and J. H. Seinfeld (2010). "A global perspective on aerosol from low-volatility organic compounds." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 10(9): 4377-4401.
- Qian, T., *et al.* (2006). "Simulation of Global Land Surface Conditions from 1948 to 2004. Part I: Forcing Data and Evaluations." Journal of Hydrometeorology, **7**(5): 953-975.
- Quaas, J., et al. (2008). "Satellite-based estimate of the direct and indirect aerosol climate forcing." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, 113(D5): D05204.
- Quaas, J., et al. (2009). "Aerosol indirect effects general circulation model intercomparison and evaluation with satellite data." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 9(22): 8697-8717.
- Ramanathan, V. and Y. Xu (2010). "The Copenhagen Accord for limiting global warming: Criteria, constraints, and available avenues." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, **107**(18): 8055-8062.
- Ramaswamy, V., *et al.* (2001). "Radiative Forcing" in Climate Change 2001: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Third Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change. J. T. Houghton, Y. Ding, D. J. Griggset al, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK and New York, USA.
- Rap, A., *et al.* (2013). "Natural aerosol direct and indirect radiative effects." Geophysical Research Letters, **40**: 3297–3301.
- Rasmann, S., *et al.* (2005). "Recruitment of entomopathogenic nematodes by insect-damaged maize roots." Nature, **434**(7034): 732-737.
- Rasmussen, R. A. (1972). "What Do the Hydrocarbons from Trees Contribute to Air Pollution?" Journal of the Air Pollution Control Association, 22(7): 537-543.
- Rasmussen, R. A. and C. A. Jones (1973). "Emission isoprene from leaf discs of hamamelis." Phytochemistry, 12(1): 15-19.
- Rasmussen, R. A. and F. W. Went (1965). "Volatile organic material of plant origin in the atmosphere." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, 53: 215-220.

- Reddington, C. L., *et al.* (2011). "Primary versus secondary contributions to particle number concentrations in the European boundary layer." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **11**(23): 12007-12036.
- Riccobono, F., *et al.* (2012). "Contribution of sulfuric acid and oxidized organic compounds to particle formation and growth." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **12**(20): 9427-9439.
- Riccobono, F., *et al.* (2013). "Oxidation Products of Biogenic Emissions Contribute to Nucleation of Atmospheric Particles." submitted.
- Riipinen, I., *et al.* (2011). "Organic condensation: a vital link connecting aerosol formation to cloud condensation nuclei (CCN) concentrations." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **11**(8): 3865-3878.
- Riipinen, I., *et al.* (2007). "Connections between atmospheric sulphuric acid and new particle formation during QUEST III-IV campaigns in Heidelberg and Hyytiälä." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 7(8): 1899-1914.
- Riipinen, I., *et al.* (2012). "The contribution of organics to atmospheric nanoparticle growth." Nature Geosci, **5**(7): 453-458.
- Roberts, G. C., *et al.* (2001). "Cloud condensation nuclei in the Amazon Basin: "marine" conditions over a continent?" Geophysical Research Letters, **28**(14): 2807-2810.
- Robinson, D. A. and G. Kukla (1985). "Maximum Surface Albedo of Seasonally Snow-Covered Lands in the Northern Hemisphere." Journal of Climate and Applied Meteorology, 24(5): 402-411.
- Rockstrom, J., *et al.* (2009). "A safe operating space for humanity." Nature, **461**(7263): 472-475.
- Rogelj, J., *et al.* (2013). "2020 emissions levels required to limit warming to below 2 degrees C." Nature Clim. Change, **3**(4): 405-412.
- Rohmer, M. (1999). "The discovery of a mevalonate-independent pathway for isoprenoid biosynthesis in bacteria, algae and higher plants." Natural Product Reports, 16(5): 565-574.
- Rosenstiel, T. N., *et al.* (2003). "Increased CO2 uncouples growth from isoprene emission in an agriforest ecosystem." Nature, **421**(6920): 256-259.
- Rossow, W. B. and R. A. Schiffer (1999). "Advances in Understanding Clouds from ISCCP."B. Am. Meteorol. Soc., 80(11): 2261-2287.
- Saatchi, S. S., *et al.* (2011). "Benchmark map of forest carbon stocks in tropical regions across three continents." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, **108**(24): 9899-9904.

- Sakulyanontvittaya, T., *et al.* (2008). "Monoterpene and Sesquiterpene Emission Estimates for the United States." Environmental Science & Technology, **42**(5): 1623-1629.
- Sanadze, G. A. and A. L. Kursanov (1966). "On certain conditions of the evolution of the diene  $C_5H_8$  from poplar leaves." Sov. Plant Physiol., **13**: 184-189.
- Schmidt, A., *et al.* (2012). "Importance of tropospheric volcanic aerosol for indirect radiative forcing of climate." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **12**(16): 7321-7339.
- Schulz, M., *et al.* (2006). "Radiative forcing by aerosols as derived from the AeroCom present-day and pre-industrial simulations." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **6**(12): 5225-5246.
- Seinfeld, J. H. and S. N. Pandis (2006a). "Chemistry of the Atmospheric Aqueous Phase" in Atmospheric Chemistry and Physics: From Air Pollution to Climate Change, John Wiley & Sons, Inc. p284-349.
- Seinfeld, J. H. and S. N. Pandis (2006b). "Chemistry of the Troposphere" in Atmospheric Chemistry and Physics: From Air Pollution to Climate Change, John Wiley & Sons, Inc. p204-279.
- Seinfeld, J. H. and S. N. Pandis (2006c). "Cloud Physics" in Atmospheric Chemistry and Physics: From Air Pollution to Climate Change. 2nd, John Wiley & Sons, Inc. p761-822.
- Sekhon, R. S. and R. C. Srivastava (1971). "Doppler Radar Observations of Drop-Size Distributions in a Thunderstorm." Journal of the Atmospheric Sciences, 28(6): 983-994.
- Sharkey, T. D., et al. (1991). "High carbon dioxide and sun/shade effects on isoprene emission from oak and aspen tree leaves." Plant, Cell & Environment, 14(3): 333-338.
- Sihto, S.-L., *et al.* (2006). "Atmospheric sulphuric acid and aerosol formation: implications from atmospheric measurements for nucleation and early growth mechanisms." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 6: 4079-4091.
- Silver, G. M. and R. Fall (1991). "Enzymatic Synthesis of Isoprene from Dimethylallyl Diphosphate in Aspen Leaf Extracts." Plant Physiology, **97**(4): 1588-1591.
- Slinn, W. G. N. (1982). "Predictions for particle deposition to vegetative canopies." Atmospheric Environment (1967), 16(7): 1785-1794.
- Snow-Kropla, E. J., *et al.* (2011). "Cosmic rays, aerosol formation and cloud-condensation nuclei: sensitivities to model uncertainties." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **11**(8): 4001-4013.
- Snyder, P. K., *et al.* (2004). "Evaluating the influence of different vegetation biomes on the global climate." Climate Dynamics, 23: 279-302.

- Solomon, S., et al. (2007). "Technical Summary" in Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change. S. Solomon, D. Qin, M. Manninget al, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK and New York, USA.
- Spracklen, D. V. (2005). Development and application of a Global Model of Aerosol Processes, University of Leeds, UK. **PhD**.
- Spracklen, D. V., *et al.* (2012). "Observations of increased tropical rainfall preceded by air passage over forests." Nature, **489**(7415): 282-285.
- Spracklen, D. V., *et al.* (2008a). "Boreal forests, aerosols and the impacts on clouds and climate." Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society A, **366**: 4613-4626.
- Spracklen, D. V., *et al.* (2008b). "Contribution of particle formation to global cloud condensation nuclei concentrations." Geophys. Res. Lett., **35**(6): L06808.
- Spracklen, D. V., *et al.* (2006). "The contribution of boundary layer nucleation events to total particle concentrations on regional and global scales." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 6(12): 5631-5648.
- Spracklen, D. V., et al. (2010). "Explaining global surface aerosol number concentrations in terms of primary emissions and particle formation." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 10(10): 4775-4793.
- Spracklen, D. V., *et al.* (2011a). "Global cloud condensation nuclei influenced by carbonaceous combustion aerosol." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **11**(17): 9067-9087.
- Spracklen, D. V., *et al.* (2011b). "Aerosol mass spectrometer constraint on the global secondary organic aerosol budget." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **11**(23): 12109-12136.
- Spracklen, D. V., et al. (2005a). "A global off-line model of size-resolved aerosol microphysics: I. Model development and prediction of aerosol properties." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 5(8): 2227-2252.
- Spracklen, D. V., et al. (2005b). "A global off-line model of size-resolved aerosol microphysics: II. Identification of key uncertainties." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 5(12): 3233-3250.
- Staudt, M., et al. (1997). "Seasonal and diurnal patterns of monoterpene emissions from Pinus pinea (L.) under field conditions." Atmospheric Environment, **31, Supplement** 1(0): 145-156.
- Steinbrecher, R., et al. (1993). Terpenoid Emissions from Common Oak (Quercus robur L.) and Norway Spruce (Picea abies L. Karst.). Air Pollution Research Report 47: Joint Workshop CEC/BIATEX of EUROTRAC: 251-259.

- Stewart, D. J., *et al.* (2013). "The kinetics of the gas-phase reactions of selected monoterpenes and cyclo-alkenes with ozone and the NO3 radical." Atmospheric Environment, **70**(0): 227-235.
- Stier, P., *et al.* (2005). "The aerosol-climate model ECHAM5-HAM." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **5**(4): 1125-1156.
- Stokes, R. H. and R. A. Robinson (1966). "Interactions in Aqueous Nonelectrolyte Solutions.I. Solute-Solvent Equilibria." The Journal of Physical Chemistry, **70**(7): 2126-2131.
- Street, R. A., et al. (1997). "Effect of habitat and age on variations in volatile organic compound (VOC) emissions from Quercus ilex and Pinus pinea." Atmospheric Environment, **31, Supplement 1**(0): 89-100.
- Sugarman, N. and P. M. Daugherty (1956). "Oxidation of Alpha-Pinene." Industrial & Engineering Chemistry, 48(10): 1831-1835.
- Swann, A. L. S., *et al.* (2012). "Mid-latitude afforestation shifts general circulation and tropical precipitation." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, **109**(3): 712-716.
- Taraborrelli, D., *et al.* (2012). "Hydroxyl radical buffered by isoprene oxidation over tropical forests." Nature Geosci, 5(3): 190-193.
- Thomas, G. and P. R. Rowntree (1992). "The Boreal Forests and Climate." Quarterly Journal of the Royal Meteorological Society, **118**(505): 469-497.
- Tiedtke, M. (1989). "A Comprehensive Mass Flux Scheme for Cumulus Parameterization in Large-Scale Models." Monthly Weather Review, **117**(8): 1779-1800.
- Tingey, D., *et al.* (1981). "Effects of environmental conditions on isoprene emission from live oak." Planta, **152**(6): 565-570.
- Tingey, D. T., *et al.* (1979). "The Influence of Light and Temperature on Isoprene Emission Rates from Live Oak." Physiologia Plantarum, **47**(2): 112-118.
- Tingey, D. T., et al. (1980). "Influence of Light and Temperature on Monoterpene Emission Rates from Slash Pine." Plant Physiology, 65(5): 797-801.
- Trenberth, K. E., *et al.* (2009). "Earth's Global Energy Budget." Bulletin of the American Meteorological Society, **90**(3): 311-323.
- Trenberth, K. E., *et al.* (2007). "Observations: Surface and Atmospheric Climate Change" in Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change.S. Solomon, D. Qin, M. Manninget al, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, UK and New York, USA.

- Tsigaridis, K., *et al.* (2005). "Naturally driven variability in the global secondary organic aerosol over a decade." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **5**(7): 1891-1904.
- Tuazon, E. C. and R. Atkinson (1990). "A product study of the gas-phase reaction of Isoprene with the OH radical in the presence of NOx." International Journal of Chemical Kinetics, 22(12): 1221-1236.
- Tunved, P., *et al.* (2006). "High Natural Aerosol Loading over Boreal Forests." Science, **312**(5771): 261-263.
- Tunved, P., et al. (2004a). "A pseudo-Lagrangian model study of the size distribution properties over Scandinavia: transport from Aspvreten to Värriö." Atmos. Chem. Phys. Discuss., 4(6): 7757-7794.
- Tunved, P., et al. (2004b). "An investigation of processes controlling the evolution of the boundary layer aerosol size distribution properties at the Swedish background station Aspvreten." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 4(11/12): 2581-2592.
- Tunved, P., et al. (2008). "The natural aerosol over Northern Europe and its relation to anthropogenic emissions - implications of important climate feedbacks." Tellus B, 60(4): 473-484.
- Twomey, S. (1977). "Influence of Pollution on Shortwave Albedo Clouds." Journal of the Atmospheric Sciences, **34**(7): 1149-1152.
- UNFCCC (2009). "Copenhagen Accord."
- UNFCCC (2010). Report of the Conference of the Parties on its sixteenth session, United Nations.
- UNFCCC (2012). Report of the Conference of the Parties on its eighteenth session, United Nations.
- Unger, N., *et al.* (2013). "Photosynthesis-dependent isoprene emission from leaf to planet in a global carbon–chemistry–climate model." Atmos. Chem. Phys. Discuss., **13**(7): 17717-17791.
- United Nations. (2013). Retrieved 12/07/2013, from http://www.un-redd.org.
- van der Werf, G. R., *et al.* (2004). "Continental-Scale Partitioning of Fire Emissions During the 1997 to 2001 El Niño/La Niña Period." Science, **303**(5654): 73-76.
- Vehkamäki, H., *et al.* (2002). "An improved parameterization for sulfuric acid–water nucleation rates for tropospheric and stratospheric conditions." Journal of Geophysical Research-Atmospheres, **107**(D22): 4622.
- Verheggen, B., et al. (2007). "α-Pinene Oxidation in the Presence of Seed Aerosol: Estimates of Nucleation Rates, Growth Rates, and Yield." Environmental Science & Technology, 41(17): 6046-6051.

- Vestin, A., et al. (2007). "Cloud-nucleating properties of the Amazonian biomass burning aerosol: Cloud condensation nuclei measurements and modeling." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **112**(D14): D14201.
- Vickers, C. E., *et al.* (2009). "A unified mechanism of action for volatile isoprenoids in plant abiotic stress." Nat Chem Biol, **5**(5): 283-291.
- Vignati, E., et al. (2004). "M7: An efficient size-resolved aerosol microphysics module for large-scale aerosol transport models." J. Geophys. Res., 109(D22): D22202.
- Wang, J., et al. (2008). "Effects of aerosol organics on cloud condensation nucleus (CCN) concentration and first indirect aerosol effect." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 8(21): 6325-6339.
- Wang, S., et al. (2007). "Carbon sinks and sources in China's forests during 1901–2001." Journal of Environmental Management, 85(3): 524-537.
- Wang, W., et al. (2005). "Characterization of oxygenated derivatives of isoprene related to 2methyltetrols in Amazonian aerosols using trimethylsilylation and gas chromatography/ion trap mass spectrometry." Rapid Communications in Mass Spectrometry, **19**(10): 1343-1351.
- Weber, R. J., *et al.* (1996). "Measured Atmospheric New Particle Formation Rates: Implications for Nucleation Mechanisms." Chemical Engineering Communications, 151(1): 53-64.
- Weber, R. J., et al. (2007). "A study of secondary organic aerosol formation in the anthropogenic-influenced southeastern United States." J. Geophys. Res., 112(D13): D13302.
- Went, F. W. (1960a). "Blue Hazes in the Atmosphere." Nature, 187: 641-643.
- Went, F. W. (1960b). "Organic Matter in the Atmosphere, and its Possible Relation to Petroleum Formation." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, 46: 212-221.
- Williams, E., *et al.* (2002). "Contrasting convective regimes over the Amazon: Implications for cloud electrification." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, **107**(D20): 8082.
- Williams, J. E., *et al.* (2013). "Quantifying the uncertainty in simulating global tropospheric composition due to the variability in global emission estimates of Biogenic Volatile Organic Compounds." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **13**(5): 2857-2891.
- Williams, M. (2003). Deforesting the Earth, The University of Chigaco Press.
- Winterhalter, R., *et al.* (2000). "Products and Mechanism of the Gas Phase Reaction of Ozone with β-Pinene." Journal of Atmospheric Chemistry, **35**(2): 165-197.

- Wise, M., et al. (2009). "Implications of Limiting CO2 Concentrations for Land Use and Energy." Science, 324(5931): 1183-1186.
- Woodhouse, M. T., *et al.* (2010). "Low sensitivity of cloud condensation nuclei to changes in the sea-air flux of dimethyl-sulphide." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **10**(16): 7545-7559.
- Yli-Juuti, T., *et al.* (2011). "Growth rates of nucleation mode particles in Hyytiälä during 2003-2009: variation with particle size, season, data analysis method and ambient conditions." Atmos. Chem. Phys., **11**(24): 12865-12886.
- Yokouchi, Y. and Y. Ambe (1985). "Aerosols formed from the chemical reaction of monoterpenes and ozone." Atmospheric Environment (1967), **19**(8): 1271-1276.
- Yu, F. (2011). "A secondary organic aerosol formation model considering successive oxidation aging and kinetic condensation of organic compounds: global scale implications." Atmos. Chem. Phys., 11(3): 1083-1099.
- Yu, F. and R. P. Turco (2001). "From molecular clusters to nanoparticles: Role of ambient ionization in tropospheric aerosol formation." Journal of Geophysical Research: Atmospheres, 106(D5): 4797-4814.
- Yu, J., et al. (1999a). "Gas-Phase Ozone Oxidation of Monoterpenes: Gaseous and Particulate Products." Journal of Atmospheric Chemistry, 34(2): 207-258.
- Yu, J., et al. (1998). "Identification of Products Containing -COOH, -OH, and -CO in Atmospheric Oxidation of Hydrocarbons." Environmental Science & Technology, 32(16): 2357-2370.
- Yu, J., et al. (1999b). "Observation of Gaseous and Particulate Products of Monoterpene Oxidation in Forest Atmospheres." Geophys. Res. Lett., 26(8): 1145-1148.
- Zadanovskii, A. B. (1948). "New methods for calculating solubilities of electrolytes in multicomponent systems." Zhurnal fizicheskoi khimii (Russian Journal of Physical Chemistry), **22**: 1475-1485.
- Zeng, Z., *et al.* (2013). "Committed changes in tropical tree cover under the projected 21st century climate change." Sci. Rep., **3**.
- Zhang, L., *et al.* (2001). "A size-segregated particle dry deposition scheme for an atmospheric aerosol module." Atmospheric Environment, **35**(3): 549-560.
- Zhang, Q., et al. (2007). "Ubiquity and dominance of oxygenated species in organic aerosols in anthropogenically-influenced Northern Hemisphere midlatitudes." Geophys. Res. Lett., 34(13): L13801.
- Zhang, R., *et al.* (2009). "Formation of nanoparticles of blue haze enhanced by anthropogenic pollution." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, **106**(42): 17650-17654.

- Zhang, X., *et al.* (2012). "Diffusion-Limited Versus Quasi-Equilibrium Aerosol Growth." Aerosol Science and Technology, **46**(8): 874-885.
- Zickfeld, K., *et al.* (2009). "Setting cumulative emissions targets to reduce the risk of dangerous climate change." Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America, **106**(38): 16129-16134.